



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

SEARCH LIBRARIES



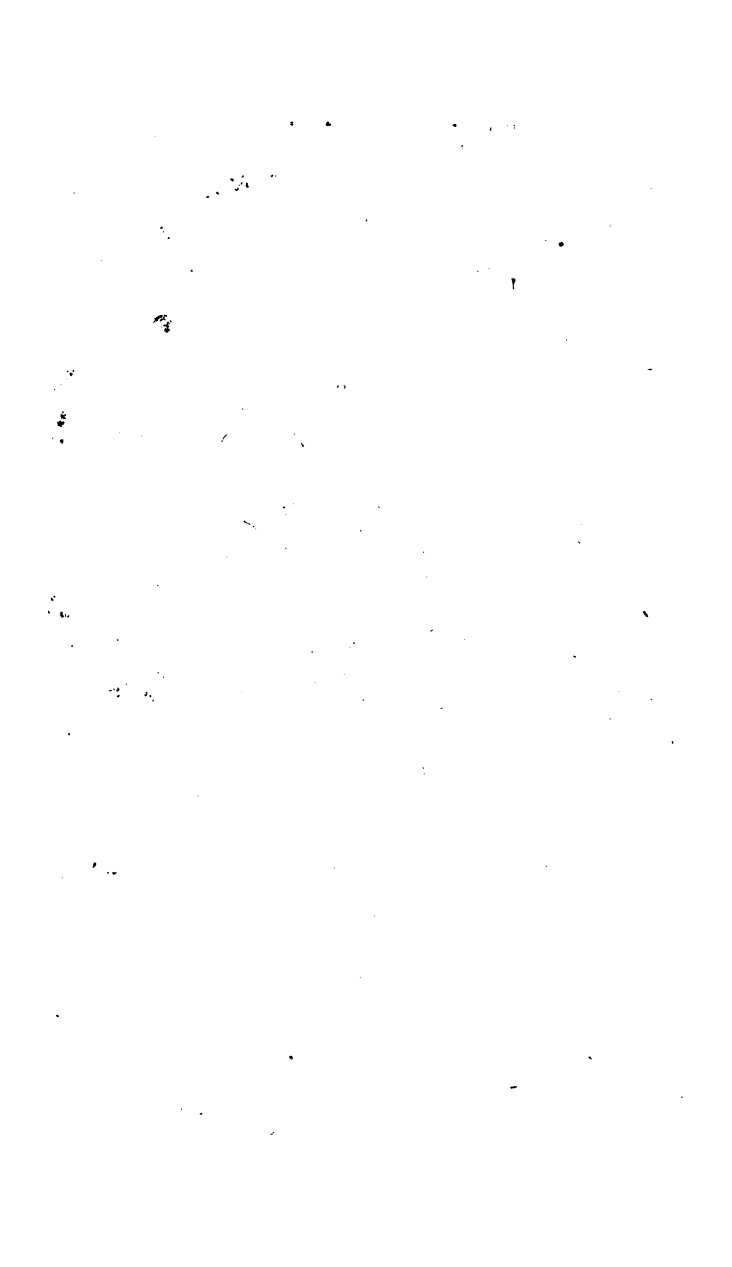
07576973 1

02-21

7

NC

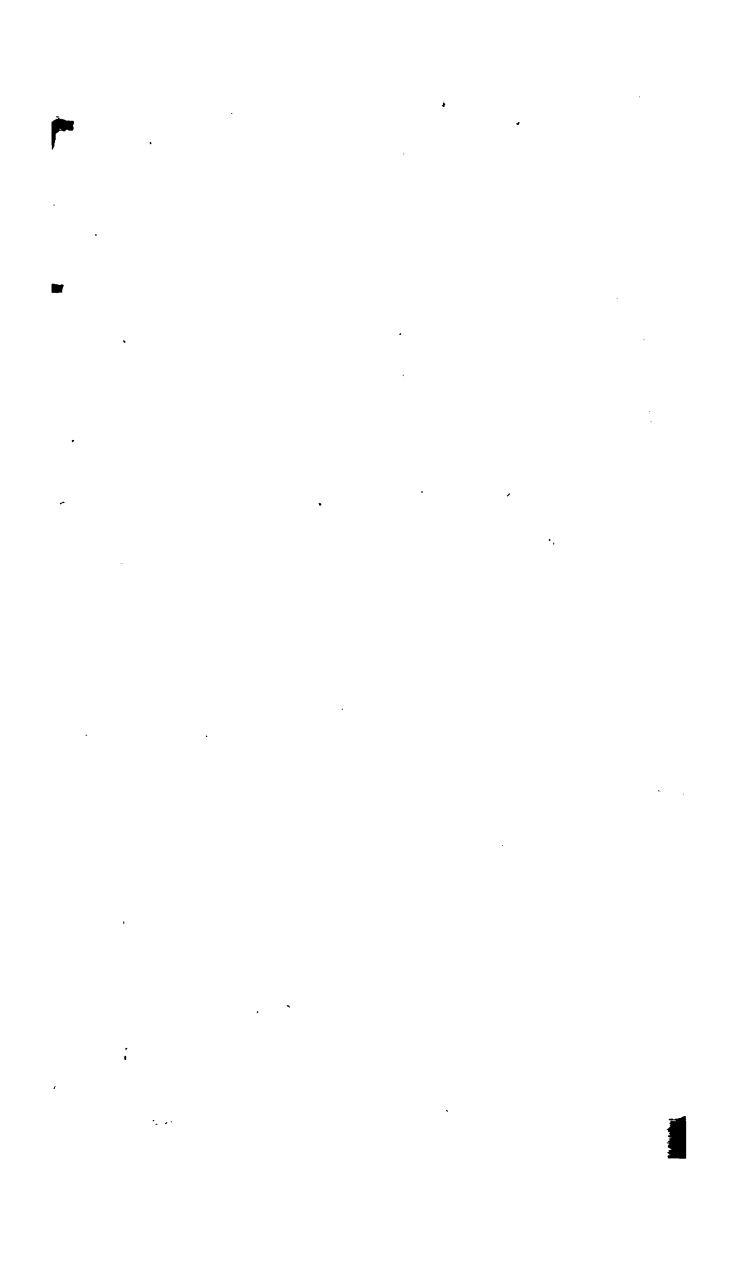




King George IV - 1830







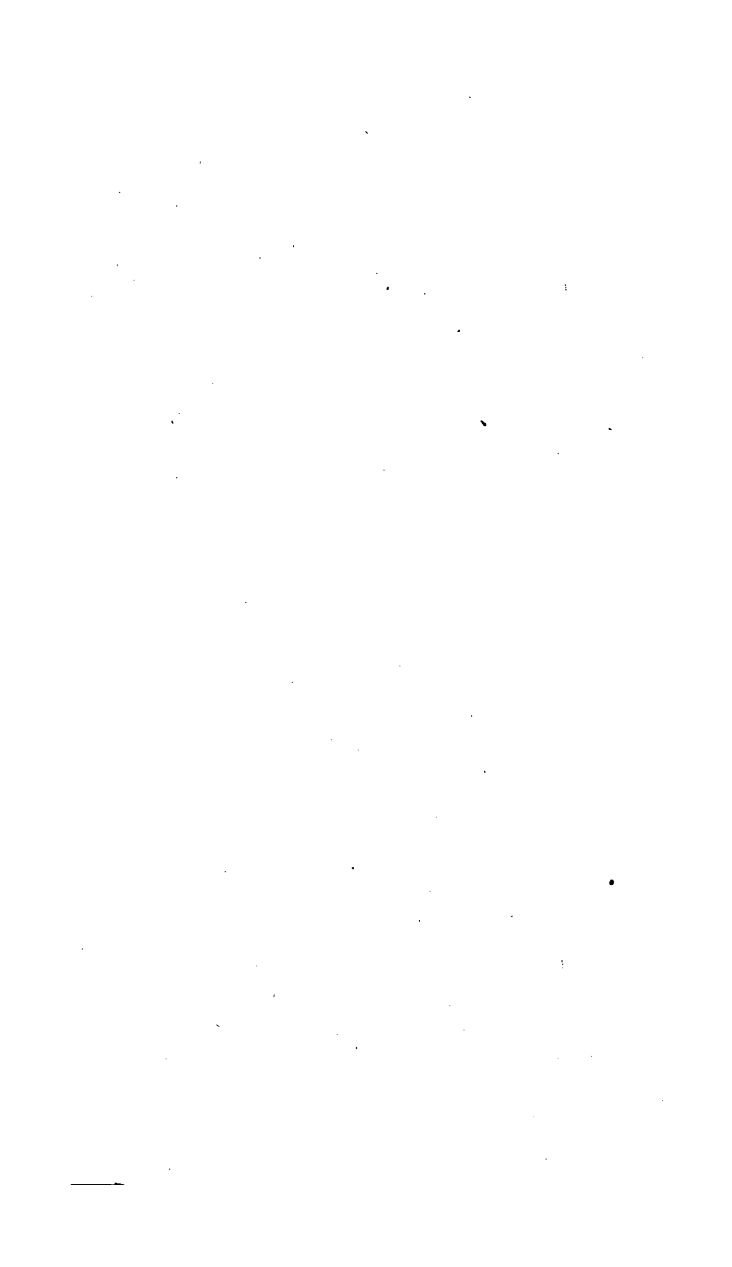


[See page 37.]

SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE
OF
HIS SHIPWRECK.



NEW-YORK:
HARPER AND BROTHERS, CLIFF-ST.
1843.



SIR EDWARD SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE

OF

HIS SHIPWRECK,

AND CONSEQUENT

**DISCOVERY OF CERTAIN ISLANDS IN THE CARIB-
BEAN SEA:**

WITH DETAILS OF HIS RESIDENCE THERE,

**AND OF VARIOUS EXTRAORDINARY AND HIGHLY INTEREST-
ING EVENTS IN HIS LIFE.**

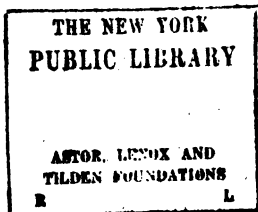
EDITED BY MISS JANE PORTER.

ABRIDGED AND REVISED.

NEW-YORK:

HARPER AND BROTHERS, 82 CLIFF-ST.

1843.



Entered, according to Act of Congress, in the year 1843, by
HARPER & BROTHERS,
In the Clerk's Office of the Southern District of New-York.

P R E F A C E

OF THE AMERICAN EDITOR.

THIS delightful narrative has passed through various editions in England, and was some years ago republished in this country. Scarcely any work of the kind, indeed, enjoys a higher or more deserved popularity. Still, the great charm and interest of the book centre in that portion of it which gives an account of the simple, Crusoe-like life of Sir Edward and his Eliza, before they were disturbed in their retirement by the intrusion of others, or by their own ambitious dreams of wealth and worldly distinction. In the one instance they exhibit the rare and beautiful spectacle of two loving hearts needing nothing for their happiness but communion with their God and with each other; in the other, we contemplate them simply as ordinary mortals in the common circumstances of humanity, and influenced by its usual passions and frailties. Hence, the present editor was induced to attempt such an abridgment of the work as would retain, nearly entire, what he considered to be its

most instructive as well as interesting portion, omitting, with the same freedom, whatever he deemed unessential to the completeness and unity of the picture he wished to present. It is proper, also, to state, that of the verbal alterations which have been made, some were rendered necessary by the abridgment itself, while others were adopted for the sake of greater clearness or accuracy. The editor's only desire has been, to make the narrative both more pleasing and more profitable to the reader.

SEAWARD'S NARRATIVE.

CHAPTER I.

BORN of honest parents, whose means were just sufficient to give a common education to their children, I have neither to boast of pedigree nor of learning; yet they bequeathed to me a better inheritance—a stout constitution, a peaceable disposition, and a proper sense of what is due to my superiors and equals: for such an inheritance I am grateful to God and to them.

I had not left school long when I felt an inclination to see foreign parts, and under this feeling I desired earnestly to go to sea. But my poor dear mother would not hear of it, and I could not find it in my heart to grieve her, even for a moment: so I yielded up my inclination to my sense of duty, and during two years was content to assist my father in the management of his little farm; taking the diversions of fishing and shooting, in their seasons, by way of amusement and recreation. At the expiration of this time my paternal uncle sent for me to Bristol, and placed me in his counting-house. Within a year from this event I lost my dear mother, on which occasion I returned to my parental roof to console my remaining parent, with whom I continued a few months. During my stay on this melancholy occasion I took some little part in the farm business; but, having many unoccupied hours, I passed most of them with our benevolent pastor, my former kind schoolmaster, the Rev. Mr. William Goldsmith, between whose amiable family and my fa-

ther's there had existed the kindest feeling from our infancy.

One morning, as my father and I were talking over my future prospects in life, I received a letter from my uncle, in which he stated that he wanted me to go to Virginia in one of his vessels as supercargo. I was delighted with the proposal, to which my dear father made no objections, as he might hope soon to see me again. In a few days I took leave of our friends at the parsonage and of my own family. At parting, my father gave me his blessing and my mother's Bible; and with these much-valued gifts I left the village of my nurture and nativity.

My uncle received me kindly, and took much pains to instruct me in the business which he had appointed me to manage. I was delighted with everything connected with my preparation for the voyage, and I sailed on the 5th of April, 1733, in the brig *Mary*, for America, with an assortment of goods.

We arrived in the Chesapeake Bay on the 2d of June, which was considered a good passage, and on the following day proceeded up the river to Annapolis. On my arrival, our correspondent was civil to me, but that was all: he did not like a supercargo being sent in the vessel; still, he gave me reason to think I had gained his esteem before we parted. He made me a present of a Virginia nightingale—a beautiful red bird about the size of a thrush, with a feathery crest. "This," said I to myself, "is for my aunt." I should have liked to have procured another for Eliza Goldsmith; but, as I could not bring one for each of her sisters and my own also, I prudently gave up the wish. But I got some capital tobacco-seed, which, with a few heads of Indian corn and a few pumpkin seeds, I put up, they being intended for my dear father to try on his farm, as I thought those plants might, perhaps, thrive well in England.

On the 8th of August I took leave of my friends

at Annapolis ; and after a stormy passage, but with a fair wind generally, we arrived at Bristol on the 15th of September, to the great surprise and delight of my uncle, who did not expect the brig for at least a month to come. I was much elated by the novelty and success of my voyage, and hastened to town as soon as we dropped anchor in King's Road. Quick as my movements were, he had received notice of my coming, and met me at the door of his house. A crape on his hat arrested my attention. Heart-struck, I cast my subdued eye on it ; then, looking at him earnestly, said, "Have I lost my father?" Without answering, he turned and went into the house, and I followed him.

"God's will be done, Ned!" said he to me ; "how many hogsheads of tobacco have you brought home?" "My dear uncle," I replied, "my heart is too full to speak on business at present : let me retire for a few minutes, or go and see my aunt, and after that I will give you every information you desire." Saying this, I left him in the passage and went into the parlour, where I found my aunt, who always had been kind to me, but now was doubly so. She wiped the tear from my eye, and endeavoured to stay my grief by every comforting expression that goodness could suggest ; but nature would pay the tribute of sorrow, in spite of every attempt to prevent it. My aunt, perhaps tired of saying the same thing over and over again, now left me alone. In a short time I began to feel myself composed ; and she, returning, told me the particulars of my dear old father's illness and death, which had taken place a month before.

Tea was brought in, and my uncle followed it. He took me by the hand, saying, "Poor Ned ! thou hast a tender heart, poor boy ! but thy father was a good father, Ned, and it is honest and creditable to thee to show decent sorrow for the loss of such a parent. But he hasn't left thee anything, Ned ;

what little he had he has bequeathed to thy brother and sisters; they are young, thou knowest: he thought thee might get thy own bread." "And he thought right, I hope, dear uncle," I replied: "he did righteously, and I revere his memory the more for taking care of the most helpless." "But how many hogsheads of tobacco didst thou bring home, Ned?" "Three hundred, sir; but if you will allow me till after tea, I will then go with you into the counting-house, and give you every information you require respecting the cargo and the voyage." "Wouldst like to go again, Ned?" "Yes, sir, certainly, if it be your wish: after I have made a short visit to my brother and sisters, I should be very glad to make a second voyage." "I don't think thee'll go to Virginia again, Ned; here is a letter for thee from my son Tom, at the Bay of Honduras, and I think thee will find a proposal there more to thy mind." I thought it right to do as he wished, and instantly read the letter, which, although from a near kinsman, was quite a letter of business, proposing that I should join him at Honduras, and that he would give me a share of the profits if I would reside there and allow him to return to England: he would take the part in England his father had been managing, and I should step into his shoes there, as his father wished to retire. I required time to consider of it; and soon after, going with my uncle to the counting-house, entered into details on the subject of my voyage. Throughout he was well satisfied, and frequently said I was "no fool," which expression from him meant no ordinary compliment.

The next day he asked me if I had made up my mind on the proposal to go to Honduras. I said I had been turning the subject over in my mind, and found that I could say nothing about it. "What dost mean by that?" exclaimed my uncle, testily. "I mean, sir," said I, "that, as I neither have money nor anything else but what I derive from you,

it does not become me to say anything about it farther than that I am ready to do whatever you may think me qualified to undertake, and that will be for my welfare." "That'll do, Ned," said my uncle; "I'll guide thee right, my boy, and Tom is no churl: he will not grudge thee a good outfit and thy fair earnings. But if he were to, am I not thy uncle and his father? and the staff is in my own hand; I will make no difference between him and thee. Thou art a good boy, Ned, and I loved thy father; and thou hast shown thy willingness to lean on me, and be guided by me, and I will not disappoint thee in thy desire. Go into the country and visit thy brother and sisters; and when thou returnest, the brig shall be ready to sail with an investment for Jamaica and the Bay."

The Virginia nightingale had been brought on shore while I was closeted with my uncle. I had not said anything about it to my aunt for fear of some accident happening to it; but I came into the parlour as she was admiring it. "La! what a pretty bird, dear Edward! who have you brought that pretty bird for?" she exclaimed. "For you, aunt, to be sure; for whom else could I bring it?" "Well, I thought so, dear Edward, but I was not quite sure; for young people do behave themselves so ungraciously, nowadays, to their elder relatives, that I did almost wrong thee, my dear boy." "Nay, aunt, you have always been kind to me, and I am indeed happy in this opportunity of showing that I did not forget my aunt when a wide sea divided me from her." "You have not, Edward; and you know I love you as a son. Will the bird talk, Edward? What do you call it, Edward?" "It is a Virginia nightingale, dear aunt." "Oh! then it is a singing-bird?" "Yes, aunt, it sings a little, but not so sweetly as our nightingale: it has received a larger share of beauty from the hand of its Maker than the nightingale of England, but our nightingale far exceeds it in melo-

dy." "That is as it should be, Edward—one handsome, another clever; to one riches are given, to another health, and so forth. God is wise and just, dear Edward; but you have been taught to know all such things, from your good mother and Parson Goldsmith." "I hope so, aunt," I replied; "but have you any commands to Awbury? (for so was then called the obscure village of my birth): I am going there as soon as I have settled accounts with my uncle as to what I have been doing in America." "I will trouble thee," said she, "with a little parcel for the girls, and my love; and if canst borrow a pillion, I should have no objection to go behind thee, and see what they are all about." This last part of my aunt's speech rather embarrassed me. Much as I loved my aunt, I confess I felt no desire to ride a pillion horse on this occasion. But she was only jesting; so that I had no reason to fear either vexation or detention from this source.

In a few days I finished with my uncle, and then made arrangements for paying the intended visit to my friends. I set out on horseback, with feelings of a very sober kind, and, being alone, had much time for meditation as I rode slowly along. I looked back on the happy days of my boyhood; played with my fellows, in memory, on the green before the schoolhouse, and called to mind some of the old people; among others, my honoured father, sitting beneath the venerable elm there, in its full maturity of three hundred years. I believed then that the world could not boast such a man nor such a tree. I thought, also, with pleasure on my revered pastor and schoolmaster, who was meek and kind-hearted to all, and who managed to make his boys scholars without using either the birch or the ferule. He was, indeed, more anxious to teach us our duty than our Latin; but he contrived to teach us both. The kindness of his nature seemed to kindle a kindred feeling throughout the school, so that we felt

disposed to help each other, and did so, and lost nothing, but gained much in the brotherly task: he loved my father, and his family and ours were like one. The nearer I approached the village, the more impatient I became to arrive: I thought on my sisters, and their friends his daughters, every moment with increasing animation; so I gave Dobbin the spur, and, gradually quickening my pace, soon came up to our gate at a brisk canter. My sisters received me most affectionately, and quickly sent for my brother, who happened to be out. He came, and the meeting was affecting: we saw ourselves again all together, but our parents were no more with their children; we looked on the place where they were wont to sit, and wept.

By degrees my brother entered on family affairs: I soon mentioned to him my uncle's intention of settling me at Honduras as a merchant; and I expressed a hope that fortune would favour me, so that I might be able to provide for my sisters. This kind sentiment towards them was as kindly received by them; but the youngest said she would not wait the event of fortune-making, but would go with me. "I will send for you, dear Maria," said I, "when I am fairly settled, if you should then like to come." "I will go with you, Edward," she replied, "unless you can prevail on Eliza Goldsmith to be your guardian angel." Though she said this playfully, and, perhaps, a little apprehensively, I felt as if electrified by the unexpected appeal. Certainly I had always been sensible to a sentiment of a peculiar character for Eliza Goldsmith: I felt it was not exactly like that which I bore to my sister Maria, though it seemed to connect their images in my thoughts. I had seen several beautiful and amiable women abroad, but they could not bear comparison with Eliza Goldsmith: Eliza's sweet smile was, in truth, always playing round me; and, doubtless, it was the memory of what that sweet smile so faithfully express-

ed, which had unconsciously fixed my affection. Thus I had been calm, almost happy, during my absence from Eliza ; for nothing had occurred to make me discover what lay hidden in my heart ; but now the tumult of my feelings awakened my suspicions, and my agitated answer confirmed Maria's. "Eliza Goldsmith," I said, "leave her happy home for me ! leave father, sisters, for me !" and I believe I said the last words in a way that would have shown a child my deep affection. Then I added, in an altered tone, "Eliza Goldsmith would never think of Edward Seaward as you seem to wish, Maria."

I sighed deeply ; Maria smiled ; but she soon grew serious, and said, "You know, Edward, that Eliza is sincerity itself ; indeed, she has not a feeling that she need be ashamed to own. From the hour that she became sensible to your decided preference for her—your love, I will say—she never tried to conceal her great affection for you."

"Became sensible to my preference ! my love ! Maria, I never thought—never dared—surely, I never could have said anything—"

"Never purposely, I dare say, Edward," replied Maria ; "nor anything that would be directly understood by other people ; but Eliza could not remain blind to what we all saw. It was plain to every one of us, that when Eliza was present you never missed any other creature ; that you were even more proud of her approbation than of dear Mr. Goldsmith's ; that you were always contriving how you could give her pleasure. When she was sick, don't you remember how you watched everybody's looks in the house, and how kind and affectionate you were to her after her illness ? It was not long after her recovery, just when you went to Virginia, that she told me she would die single unless Heaven should bless her by making her your wife."

"Maria ! dearest Maria !" I said, and embraced

her, not being able to complete what I wished to say. While I kept silent (for I was wholly overcome with the suddenness and sweetness of this surprise), my sister went on telling me several things, which were doubly grateful to my feelings, as giving me fresh proofs of Eliza's attachment, and of her superiority over all other women in that frankness which is only to be found in generous and noble characters.

At last I recovered my ordinary powers, and, thanking my sister for the kindness in showing me where I might find a treasure beyond value, I said, "If it be really so, Maria, Edward Seaward is the happiest of happy men. But to ask Eliza Goldsmith to go with me to such a climate! to marry Eliza, and bury her among people that would not comprehend her! no, I cannot be so selfish. Did I not refuse to take you with me, dear sister, because I love you? and ought I not to let the same motive prevail against my wish for such a companion as Eliza? I must not think of it; I will act as becomes the pupil of her excellent father."

"Well, well, this is all very fine," said my elder sister; "but I think, before you make rash resolutions, you had better come with us to the parsonage, and see how you feel about it in Eliza's company."

This remark set us all on foot; and it being now nearly sunset, we went forth to visit the dearest friends of our early years. How happy was my old master to see me! how rejoiced the girls! Eliza only was silent; but, as I took her hand, there was something in its tremour and in her shaded eyes that showed there was an anxious feeling at her heart, which prevented her from entirely sharing her sisters' joy, or from welcoming me with the cheerful kindness they did. They talked, she was silent: I was surprised, disappointed, bewildered; it was not the reception I had foolishly expected; yet I endeavoured to keep my spirits elate, but soon

found I could not continue conversation ; first I became silent, then serious, then depressed. I now found that, although I had not been six hours in the village, the Goldsmiths already knew of my intended residence in America, and the subject was accordingly brought forward by them, and variously commented on. Each member of the family had a hope, a fear, or a solicitude to express. One sought to encourage me, another to dissuade me from accepting my uncle's offer. Eliza remained silent : I wished to know her opinion, but I had not the courage to say so. I suppose my looks asked for it, for at length she said,

“Edward, the providence of God is with you, whether in England or in the solitary desert : be not dissuaded from doing that which, in your own mind, you may think right.”

There was a noble firmness in her voice as she said this, although her eyes had tears in them. On meeting those sweet eyes, I got up from the place where I was sitting between my dear sister and Miss Goldsmith, and seating myself beside Eliza, took her hand, and, turning towards her, would have spoken, but could not : her hand trembled a little, yet she looked on me with a sweet and settled composure, which gradually shed a calm over my agitated feelings.

I cannot now repeat what we said to each other about my removal to a distant land, having no distinct remembrance of it, we were both so deeply moved : all I am sure of is, that I did not speak of love. Our hearts, indeed, were already united ; and I think Eliza felt, as I did, that after this evening they never could be separated.

The tea called us round the table, over which we conversed on past times with great delight.

“Do you remember,” said Eliza, “when you taught me through this window how to know whether the moon is in its increase or in its wane ?”

"I do remember it, dear Eliza," I replied: "it was the young moon, a simple curved line, showing itself nearly where the sun had set; and I remember—yes, I well remember the words you then said to me, as we looked upon it, but I may not repeat them." "Oh, repeat them, repeat them!" every one exclaimed; "surely you cannot be ashamed of anything Eliza said." I looked at her: the bright colour heightened on her cheeks, but she was not confused. "I will repeat them myself, Edward," said she, "as they must be told: I said, 'Thou art my sun, dear Edward, and I thy faithful moon, watching thee in the west.'" "That was precisely it, my dear Eliza," I rejoined; "and may it be prophetic!"

In these few ardent words I had avowed my attachment, and finished the cruel struggle between my desire of having her the partner of my exile, and my unwillingness to take her from a peaceful home. She was silent for a moment or two, but her eyes spoke the while most eloquently; she turned them alternately from her father to me, and, resting them at last on me, said, in a very low yet firm voice, "I have long believed in your love for me, Edward Seaward—now you assure me of it. To-morrow you leave Awbury: I cannot conceal what I feel at the possibility of another separation. My father—my sisters! you know his worth: you will not think slightingly of your poor Eliza's delicacy, if now, before you all, she confesses her deep affection. Edward, dear Edward, I should pine and die were you to go alone to the dreadful country you are destined for: may it now be our fate to live or die together." Before she had finished I drew near to her, and, snatching her hand, pressed it to my lips: a hallowed tear, seen only by the eye of Him who looks into the heart, fell upon it—it was the seal of Edward's faith—it was not unperceived. I kissed that dear hand again and again, with difficulty articulating a

few words of devoted affection, and sat down by her with a delightful consciousness that she was mine.

The feelings of all present were highly excited; tears flowed apace, or stood in the eyes of each, and my dear sister Maria kissed us both, weeping tears of joy. Mr. Goldsmith sat the while without speaking, but with a serious gravity which somewhat awed me; yet his habitual kindness prevented his presence, or even his demeanour, from being a check upon the honest sentiments of our united families on such an occasion; and he knew the character of his youngest daughter too well to impute her conduct to anything but innate dignity and innocence. It was now his turn to add a word: "My children," said he, "we will sleep on this, and talk it over to-morrow."

Thus we passed the time until our departure for the farm; and our returning walk was even more happy than when going thence, under the exhilarating influence of high anticipation.

On the morrow we again visited our friends at the parsonage, and spent the day with them—a long and happy day; and a few days more completed my present visit to my native village. I had arranged everything with my revered tutor and pastor, and he promised to confide to me his beloved daughter.

I left them early on the morning of the 26th of September, with a promise quickly to return; my horse went lazily home, and I felt no disposition to hurry him. I had my hopes and fears as to the future. The past was, for the time, blotted from my memory, if I except the happy days so lately passed at Awbury; and those days seemed to constitute my present existence.

I arrived late in the evening at my uncle's, and was glad that he had gone to the club; so, after taking tea quietly with my aunt, I retired to rest. In the morning we met at breakfast: the old gentle-

man was happy to see me, talked over the business at Honduras, told me the brig was getting ready, that we were to touch at Jamaica, land some of the cargo there, and take in lumber, with other articles, for the Bay; and that his correspondent at Kingston would put me in the way to obtain a few useful things for my better accommodation at St. George's Key, where his son had resided for nearly a year, in little better than a negro hut. I heard him with courteous attention, and then thought it right for the purpose now nearest my heart to say, "Dear uncle, may I ask you one or two questions?" "Certainly, Ned! certainly! a hundred, if you like, so they be short ones." "Then, first, uncle, how long do you suppose I may have to stay there?" "Till you make so much money, Ned, that you cannot spend it without coming to England: keep that in mind, boy; so make haste in your calling." "Well, but, sir, that may not be accomplished as long as I live." "Oh, yes, Ned; I don't think thee hast a great stomach for wealth." "But, sir, you wished my questions to be short; will you have the kindness to make the answers so? May I be five, or six, or seven, or ten years at St. George's Key?" "Yes, perhaps you may: not less than five or six years, certainly." "Then, my dear uncle, I should not like to live there a bachelor, and perhaps get into immoral connexions, that would degrade me in my own eyes, and in the opinion of those I love." The old gentleman laughed immoderately; stood up, held his sides, and laughed and coughed, exclaiming at intervals, "Ned, you will be the death of me!" I knew not what to think of this; but my aunt made him sit down, saying, "Mr. Seaward, our nephew is right; I like his sentiments." "He is an ass, and you are a fool," he replied, looking sternly at her; "I don't want any of your prudery and nonsense; I will talk to him." The old lady walked out, and left us together.

My heart now sunk within me. In imagination, I had already beheld my dear Eliza living with me in ease and affluence, enjoying the bright sunshine of my prosperity under the patronage of my uncle. A cloud now hung over me, which I expected to burst with a thunder-storm the minute my aunt quitted the room. But my uncle was a wag in his way: he began to laugh immoderately again; then, recovering himself, said, "Thee wouldst follow the good book's advice, eh, Ned?" and continued his laughing fit. He was at length able to resume: "That's it, Ned, eh! but where is the wife to be had at so short a notice? We can't give an order for her—Bale No. 1, marked E. S., Ned, eh!" He then took another hearty laugh, and became quiet. I was now at ease, being convinced that he was in no surly humour, but the contrary, and thought this my auspicious moment. I at once told him the whole affair of my engagement to Eliza Goldsmith. He heard me out in a business-like manner, and after some pause, said, "Well, Ned, it's your affair, not mine, and, if you are bent on it, I'll do my part. How the speculation will turn out thee don't know, and I can't tell thee: these sort of articles that we take for better for worse, not being allowed to try the sample, don't always answer expectation; but thee mayst be more fortunate than some other people; and, as there is no time to lose, get thy business done; and, if thee likes, we will put her and thee in the manifest." He finished by shaking me by the hand kindly and warmly, saying, "Ned! married or single, I will always be as a father to thee, boy." I hope I thanked him as I ought: I am sure, if I thanked him as I wished, I did thank him as I ought. He desired me to return the next day to Awbury, and finish my business.

On the morning of the next day, after wishing me a prosperous journey, he put a little parcel into my hand for my bride, which I had the happiness to de-

liver before night: it was a hundred-pound bank note—a very acceptable wedding present. Time pressed hard; there was no opportunity for calling in church, and I must return to Bristol, and employ a proctor to procure a license. My uncle, on seeing me, and learning the cause of my being so soon back, was rather testy about the delay; it being of great importance to get the brig off, as the month of October was advancing. I could not obtain the license under ten days; but, that we might make the most of the interval, I requested my dear uncle and aunt to invite my sister Maria and Eliza Goldsmith to Bristol, that they might have the opportunity of seeing their niece and my intended; and, moreover, I considered that the two young gentlewomen, in paying this visit, would be enabled to make a good use of my uncle's kind present for Eliza's outfit. My request was instantly complied with, and the invitation joyously accepted.

My uncle was equally delighted with his niece and with her friend, but Eliza was evidently my aunt's favourite: she went with her everywhere, chose everything, bought everything, while the dear girl received with thankfulness the attentions of the old lady.

The important paper was at length obtained, and my worthy uncle, with his spouse, proposed to accompany us to Awbury: we set off, a happy party. Mr. Goldsmith received us with his usual kindness; the wedding followed, and my uncle was in high spirits, which often burst forth in boisterous joy.

On the morrow we took an affectionate leave of our dear friends. Our feelings were deep and various: there was little said at parting, but much expressed by that natural language which the overflowing heart never fails to manifest. My aunt and uncle first stepped into the coach; I then handed in my dear Eliza, and she had scarcely taken her seat when an unexpected volunteer sprung in after her.

"Who are you?" cried my uncle. "Ah, poor Fidele," said Eliza, "I had overlooked you in taking leave of my friends." She patted him kindly, and was handing him out to the servant, when the dog (a beautiful little spaniel of King Charles's breed) turned back his head to look once more on his favourite mistress, and whined so piteously, that my uncle, who observed it, exclaimed, "No, no!" and stretching himself forward, so as to be heard by the group without, said, "Let the little fellow go with her; he has a warm heart towards her, and a good one too. Dogs never change, though men sometimes do: no allusion to you, Ned." "Take him, Eliza," they all said, and I more emphatically than any of the rest: I was affected in witnessing the attachment of this dumb creature to one to whom I was myself so devotedly attached. My sister Maria and I then got into the carriage, and with many adieus from the windows we set forward, and, after a pleasing journey of a few hours, arrived at the door of my uncle.

Next day we went soberly and diligently to work to prepare for our departure. However, there was yet much to be done. I had frequent conferences with my uncle at the counting-house, and at length he gave me my instructions in writing, with letters to Mr. Dickinson at Kingston, and others for my cousin at Honduras.

CHAPTER II.

WE sailed from Bristol on the 30th of October, 1733, with a fine breeze from the eastward. On going down the River Avon in a boat, to join the brig at King's Road, Eliza was charmed with the scene-

ry on each side of the banks. St. Vincent's Rocks presented a sublime object on the right side ; and those on the left, covered with wood from the water's edge to their summits, rivalled in their beauty the sublimity of the perpendicular precipices opposite. "I shall never forget this scene," she observed, "it is so impressive." She then little thought that the time was not far distant when her abode would be under such a rock—equally precipitous, but more gigantic.

The wind was fair: we sailed down the Bristol Channel with fine weather and smooth water. It blew fresh from the northwest after passing Lundy Island, and for ten days we proceeded jocosely ; but a long continuance of contrary wind, with rain soon after, as emblematic of human life, altered our condition and our feelings. Eliza was very sick, and the captain was in bad humour, so that we were far from comfortable ; but the wind changed again, and with it returned our lively sense of present happiness, if I may so express it. Such are the events that modify earthly enjoyment. In three weeks we got into the trade-winds, when, with studding-sails below and aloft, the vessel glided along smoothly and delightfully. In little more than five weeks we passed through the Mona Passage, between Porto Rico and Hispaniola, and on the forty-second day after quitting the Bristol Channel we made the east end of Jamaica. The high blue mountains presented a most magnificent spectacle ; and when we approached near enough to discern the trees and plantations, we were charmed by the superb face of the country.

A negro pilot came on board as we neared Port Royal. Eliza was a good deal struck by his appearance, and by his manner and way of speaking, which, being nothing new to me, I hardly noticed ; I had seen such in Virginia. But for her, there was much that was interesting: he was, to her mind's

eye at the moment, the representative of the whole negro population ; and this drew from her some observations alike creditable to her head and heart. We soon hauled round Port Royal Point, the sandy foundation of a small town of little importance ; but many years ago, on the space we now sailed over, its ancestor had stood, a place of great wealth and elegance ; and they say, like Sodom and Gomorrah, it became the seat of all licentiousness, and was swallowed up by an earthquake in 1692.

We had nothing to do at Port Royal, therefore did not drop anchor, but worked up to Kingston against the seabreeze, and came to off the town just as the breeze was dying away. Mr. Dickinson, my uncle's friend, was absent in the country at his *pen* ; we therefore determined to remain on board all night, and did so. About nine o'clock next morning we received a visit from him, and much courtesy, he insisting that we should take up our residence at his pen during our stay in the island, which we gladly accepted, and accordingly accompanied him on shore. After I had delivered my letters to him, and made some arrangements with respect to the cargo, he drove myself and wife out into the country, where we were agreeably entertained by our friend's hospitality, and the novelty of all we saw.

I returned with him in the morning to Kingston, to business, leaving my dear wife behind ; and this was our daily practice, going back again a little before supper-time. The part of the cargo for the Jamaica market was landed. American lumber, as planks, shingles, &c., together with American flour in barrels, some maize or Indian corn, together with island produce, as coffee, sugar, &c., constituted the cargo for Honduras. Mr. Dickinson gave me an appalling account of the place we were bound to. He said, St. George's Key, where my cousin resided, was nothing better than a large sandbank ;

that the town of Balize, on the main-land, consisted of a few wretched houses on the south side of the river of that name, and that the whole country, for nearly a hundred miles in every direction, was little better than a swamp covered with mangroves ; that there was neither beef nor mutton to be had ; that the inhabitants passed most of their time up the country, cutting logwood and mahogany ; that they lived on Irish salted provisions, American flour, and maize, and looked to fish and turtle as their only resource for fresh provisions. This was a sad prospect. "No wonder," said I, "that my cousin Tom desires to return to England." I must confess, the account from Mr. Dickinson disheartened me not a little, and I thought it right not to conceal what I had heard from Eliza. "Well," said she, "but we shall be together, Edward ; happiness is not meat nor drink, but peace and contentment ; and, under privations, we may be induced to seek that happiness where alone it can be found." My heart owned the support it had received : I was again at ease, and attended to the completion of our cargo with cheerfulness.

All being ready on Saturday, the 22d of December, the captain determined to sail the next day, viz., Sunday, the 23d, on which holy day, for some fanciful reason or superstition, sailors like to put to sea. By Mr. Dickinson's advice I was to buy two or three goats, and as many fowls, and ducks, and Guinea-fowl as the coops would hold, for stock on our arrival at St. George's Key, the probability being that I should find a "plentiful scarcity," as he expressed it, of such things at my cousin's residence. I had therefore to go into the negro market on Sunday morning, the market-day in Jamaica. I told Eliza of my object, and she desired to accompany me, yet not without passing a severe but just censure on such an unchristian usage in a Christian colony. The market was held in a large street, and

we saw it full of negroes, male and female, with all sorts of fruits, and vegetables, and poultry: it was a grotesque scene, and, although I had been on this side of the Atlantic before, it was perfectly novel to me. We bought two goats with kid, a dozen fowls, as many Muscovy ducks, half a dozen Guinea-fowl, a great quantity of yams, and plantains, and coccos (a sort of potato), some shaddocks, and oranges, and limes, a few pumpkins and watermelons, half a dozen fine pineapples and as many muskmelons, some capsicums and bird-peppers, and two large sugarcanes: Mr. Dickinson's negroes took our stock on board.

The brig was under weigh at eleven o'clock, and we ran down to Port Royal, a distance of eight or nine miles, in little more than an hour. With the same fine breeze we stood out to sea, and shaped our course to the southward, to keep clear of the Pedro Shoals, though this, by-the-way, was not our proper route: we should have kept between those shoals and the island of Jamaica; but it was the captain's obstinacy, or fate, not to do so. In the evening we were becalmed, Portland Point being just discoverable from deck; and during the night we made little or no headway. About three o'clock in the morning (Monday, 24th), the wind off the land reached us, and carried the brig a few leagues farther to the southward. Early in the forenoon the trade-wind set in, very fresh from E.N.E., when the captain, considering himself clear of the Pedro Shoals, edged away a little to the westward; and finding, by observation at noon, that he was well to the southward, the brig was kept away west, the trade-wind continuing to blow steadily from the eastward, but sometimes freshening almost into a gale. We found by our reckoning, on Tuesday at noon, that we must have run nearly two hundred miles during the last twenty-four hours.

The wind began now to slacken, and veered to

the N.E. and N.N.E. in squalls, it looking sometimes very black to windward, so that from time to time we were under the necessity of taking in sail. But the sea had got up, and the motion of the vessel became very uneasy: therefore it was necessary to lash and secure the hencoops on deck, and everything in the cabin and staterooms, as safely as possible. Towards evening the weather was still more unsettled; sometimes perfectly calm, yet the sea much agitated; sometimes blowing a fine steady breeze from the eastward, which induced the captain again to set the topgallant sails; then suddenly chopping round with a heavy squall from the N.W., and obliging us to clew up all sail. I requested the captain, as night was coming on, to hand the mainsail and topgallant sails, and close-reef the topsails; and, being made snug, to lay to under easy sail till daylight, as we were now approaching the mainland, where the shoals and rocks were numerous, and not accurately laid down on the chart. But he would not consent to heave the vessel to, although he made her snug; he would keep his course, to get in under the island of Rattan in the morning, if possible, and I was obliged to yield to his determination.

One of the men said we should have a hurricane: "The hurricane months are over, you blackguard," replied the captain, angrily. The man, however, appeared to know what he was talking about, and I, for one, believed him; but the captain only laughed at him after his choler had subsided. I then thought it quite time to insist on the dead lights being put in, to secure the cabin windows against the violence of the sea, if it should break against them; and well it was that I was firm to have it done; for the windows were scarcely secured when it began to thunder, and the rain fell in torrents: it was one cascade of water from the heavens. My poor dear wife had gone below into the cabin a little

before the storm came on: she had been induced to do so by the awful blackness that totally overspread the sky, which until then had been cheeringly bright in some one quarter or other; and, although I did not remain on deck five minutes after her, I was thoroughly wetted to the skin. I had scarcely entered the cabin, when the wind rose suddenly, and with such violence that the brig in an instant seemed on her beam ends. At this moment I thought I heard some one fall down the companion ladder. The hurricane had blown the sails to ribands, but the crew succeeded in getting her before the wind. The vessel being a little steady, I went to see who or what it was that had made the unlucky tumble, and found it had been my two goats, which in the bustle and confusion had probably attempted to take refuge in the companion, or else some one had thrown them there purposely out of the way, as the door was immediately closed after them, to keep the sea from rushing from the deck into the steerage and cabin. This circumstance, which at the time did not appear worthy of much notice, was nevertheless important, the hand of Providence having directed it.

I now endeavoured to comfort my wife, whose strength of mind and kindness of heart bestowed reciprocal consolation on myself. "God will preserve us, my honoured love!" said she: "I feel that we are safe, notwithstanding this dreadful hurricane; but," she added, pressing my hand and moving it to her lips, "if we should be drowned, we shall die together, and shall not be separated—we shall again meet where we can part no more." Her feelings now overpowered her, and she fell on my neck and wept. I kissed away the tears from her eyes, saying, "We will trust in the Almighty."

I wanted to go on deck, but was not able to effect it: the companion door would not move. I, however, got the people to open one of the side doors a little, and I peeped out. The storm howled

horribly, and the sea was all in a foam: the brig was running before the wind, sometimes from one point of the compass, sometimes from another, just as it happened to chop round, at which times the sea broke over her while she was veering to. Two of the hands and the yawl had been washed overboard. We continued to be driven by the gale for eight or ten hours, I cannot tell in what direction, but about two or three o'clock in the morning there was a cry of "Breakers, breakers! land! breakers!" Being no seaman, I could do no good on deck, but, hearing this, I got up the ladder to the companion door. All was again fast, and they could not open it: in fact, all hands were too much absorbed by the awfulness of their situation. In a few minutes the vessel struck, and we who were below were thrown violently on the cabin floor. The poor dog, our faithful Fidele, howled mournfully as he was driven to the farther end of the cabin, which, at such a moment, had a powerful effect on us. "We are indeed lost!" said my wife, as she recovered a little from the fall she had received. I did not now wait to console her by my words, but renewed my efforts to force the companion door and get on deck. It was, however, perfect darkness where we were, and I could not find anything to add to my own ineffectual strength, nor make any one on deck attend to me: they could not hear me for the noise made by the howling of the wind and the breaking of the sea; yet I sometimes heard them, and could discover that they were cutting away the wreck of the mainmast, which lay over the side, and were making ready to get the long boat over the gunwale, to escape, if possible, from the perishing vessel. I now became frantic: I knocked with my hands and hallooed with all my power, but to no purpose. By accident I stumbled over an empty stone bottle at the foot of the ladder, with the bottom of which I struck the companion door so violently that I suc-

ceeded in arresting the attention of the captain. He unbolted it, saying to me at the same time, "We are all lost!" but that the men were trying to launch the long boat, our only chance; for it was likely the brig would swamp in the breakers, and quite certain she would go to pieces in a few minutes; and that, if Mrs. Seaward and I chose to go, we must be up in a second; for, "look there!" said he, crying out at the same time, "another shove, lads, and she's all our own:" the long boat was launched, and I returned down the ladder with all speed. The vessel was lying on her starboard side, the sea breaking over her bow and fore-chains; but, from the position of a rocky island to windward, she was pretty quiet abaft and to leeward, so that a boat might live under her lee, and I expected the captain would wait a little for us there. The moment I rejoined my dear wife, I urged her to accompany me instantly to the deck, telling her our situation. "No!" said she, "I will not stir, and you must not stir; they will all perish: a boat cannot endure this storm. Let us trust in God, Edward," continued she, "and if we die, we will die together." "It is done," I replied; "we will not stir." "Then tell them so," cried she, hastily; "and if you can lay your hand on the bread-bag in your way, it may be useful to them if they should survive this hour." I hastened to ascend, at which moment the brig seemed to right, and I was struck back by a column of water rushing down the companion, followed by the shutting to of its doors. She had swung off the point of the reef, and the sea broke over her main chains, she being upright. I now easily succeeded in getting on deck, but no boat was to be seen: yet now and then I thought I heard the voices of the miserable crew at some distance on the brig's quarter, and sometimes I fancied I saw them, when the strong glare of the lightning lighted up everything around for an instant, leaving the succeeding darkness greater. The brig

soon took the ground again on a reef within, and heeled over as before, which threw me down the ladder; the companion doors fortunately slamming to after me, as the sea instantly broke over her fore and aft. My kind wife hastened to my assistance, but was herself thrown to the other side of the cabin. I was not hurt, so that in a little time I reached the place where she lay, and we crawled together up to windward, where we endeavoured to secure ourselves. More than an hour passed away with us thus, in dismal darkness; but we enjoyed the light of God's presence, offering up prayer to him in short but emphatic ejaculations; and he heard us: we felt the influence of his peace, and were resigned to his will.

Our situation was awful: in all human probability, within one short hour we should be engulfed by an overwhelming sea. With arms folded about each other, we sat endeavouring to keep our position, and so remained till the heaving motion of the vessel gradually subsided, and at length became scarcely perceptible; but she continued to lay over, nearly on her beam ends. I now again attempted to reach the deck; and as the ladder had been lashed, it was not displaced, notwithstanding all the shocks the vessel had sustained. Ascending, I pushed open the lee half of the companion door, when a gleam of joy rushed upon me on perceiving that the day had dawned, and that the water to leeward was quite smooth. The brig now lying on the innermost part of the reef, I discovered high land ahead and astern, and a fine sandy beach abreast of us, little more than a mile off. I hastened below to my dear wife, exclaiming, "Come to me, my love, come on deck: it is daylight!" Without a word, she made her way to me and ascended the ladder. On emerging from darkness into light, her feelings overcame her, and she poured forth her heart to God. After a few moments of abstraction, she

crept down to the lee gunwale of the quarter-deck : "Where is the boat, and our poor companions !" she exclaimed ; "I do not see them !" "Perhaps," I replied, "they are safely landed on yon beach, and will soon return to take us from the vessel." I now looked earnestly around me : the mainmast was gone, but the stump was standing ; the wreck of it had been cleared away. The foremast remained, but the fore-topmast was gone, and was hanging by its rigging forward : the booms were gone, the boats were gone, the gabbose was gone, the binnacle gone. The hencoops alone remained in their places ; but all the fowls and Guinea-fowls that were in the coop to leeward were drowned ; the ducks which were in the other coop survived, and also four fowls ; yet these seemed more dead than alive. All was desolation on deck and aloft ; but the day had dawned, and the morning smiled serenely on us, while a gentle calm spread itself over the ocean all around.

The land astern of the brig to the northward seemed high and well wooded, but our eyes were attracted by the smooth sandy shore, where we wished and hoped to be ; and thus gazing, our attention became gradually riveted on a promontory which terminated the sandy beach to the southward, distant about three miles. The rising sun shone directly upon it, and it was then that it arrested our particular notice, indeed admiration, notwithstanding our critical situation. When these almost happy emotions had a little subsided, we looked in every direction for the boat, but looked in vain ; and then sad misgivings for the fate of the crew crossed our mind, which, even in spite of our consciousness of the mercy we had experienced, extended to ourselves ; for, although we felt an honest anxiety for the lives of our captain and his men, yet we depended on them as a means, and, indeed, the only probable means, of our own escape from this unknown shore. In this suspense we continued for some

hours, during which time I fortunately thought to try the pumps. The brake of the starboard one had been shipped, but its bolt was twisted by some violence so that it would not work. I could not find the other brake; and with great difficulty, after much hard exertion, I got the brake out, and shipped it with the bolt in the lee pump. I then went to work, and there was plenty to do: I kept pumping till I was quite exhausted, and the water still came up as abundantly as ever. I concluded the brig's bottom was stove, so that, if we should beat off the reef into deep water, we must go down.

About ten o'clock in the forenoon the breeze began to set in from the sea from nearly E.N.E., and the brig worked fore and aft. I told my wife what my fears were, and that, if it should so happen, we must endeavour to get up in the fore-rigging, as the water in-shore of us could not be very deep, and take the chance of any escape from thence that might offer. She pressed my hand and looked like an angel in my face, but spoke not a word.

The breeze freshened, and the sea beat a little on the weather side of the brig. In half an hour her stern swung off into deep water, and she hung by the bow. She now righted, that is, became upright in the water, and, although no seaman, I had sailed enough to know something about it: I therefore went immediately to the tiller to see if the rudder was gone, which I had every reason to expect, but it was not; and at this discovery I rejoiced greatly, exclaiming, "The rudder is safe; that's well!" My wife did not precisely understand this, but she felt security in my look, and thanked and blessed God for his goodness. The seabreeze blew more freshly, but we still hung by the fore-foot on the edge of the reef. At length the brig broke adrift, having most likely torn off her false keel forward, and perhaps some of the coral rock which had held her. I was now all amaze, and did not know what to do. "We

must be patient, Edward," said my dear wife ; " we shall go quietly on to the sand." The brig continued to drift in towards a point of rock, close to which we saw a little rivulet. On this rock I expected to be dashed in pieces, but the current directed us past it to the southward, so that the brig drifted between the reef to the eastward and the long beach to the westward, down towards the perpendicular mountainous height we had so attentively fixed our eyes on early in the morning, as forming the southern extremity of the sandy beach. I was desirous to get the vessel under some command ; and, finding the fore-staysail yet whole, although the lee sheet had been carried away, I got the weather sheet over, and was able to set the sail. Her head now payed off, and she would steer : I therefore made up my mind to keep on as far as I could with safety, hoping to see some inlet, as the current there must indicate a passage somewhere ; but, if I could not discover one, to run her on the sandy beach. She went along cleverly for a vessel almost a wreck ; that is, she was not at all water-logged, and, consequently, in no danger of sinking. I soon approached the mountainous promontory, which seemed to stand up before me like a mighty giant, forbidding my farther progress : I therefore determined to plump her on shore. The wind, by striking against the high land, blew directly from the east, which favoured my intention. I put the helm up, and that, together with the fore-staysail, brought her head to the west, and I ran for the beach close under the promontory. How great was my joy when I discovered an inlet not twice the vessel's breadth. I pushed into it, and in a few minutes found myself at the end of a little cove, with rocks on my larboard side, and a fine sandy beach on my right, with the same ahead. Here the brig struck, and her bow stuck fast, the shock throwing myself and my wife forward with great violence. " Blessed be God !" cried I, getting

up and shaking myself; but my dear Eliza was stunned by the fall, and it was some time before she recovered. Eventful as our situation was, I thought of nothing but her: I sat down by her, and rubbed her hands between mine. She at length looked up and smiled; then raising her arm over my neck, and kissing my forehead, as she was often wont to do, she said, "I thank God you are safe, my Edward!"

CHAPTER III.

We saw ourselves thus delivered from the perils of the ocean, and placed in a state of security; and, raising our hearts to the fountain of mercy, blessed God in thankfulness. It was, however, some time before we could collect ourselves; but our self-possession at length completely returned, and we found ourselves in a snug place, the sea all on this side of the reef to far beyond us being perfectly smooth.

"Poor Fidele!" suddenly exclaimed my wife, "it is only now that I remember thee! I will go down into the cabin, and see what has become of my faithful little dog." "Yes, my Eliza," I replied, "we will go down together; and as we are in a safe place here, where the sea cannot break in upon the vessel, I will get out the dead lights, and let the cheerful day and fresh air into the cabin by opening the windows; we shall then see what we are about." The poor dog was overjoyed by the first admission of light and by our presence: he could not contain himself. To use a homely but expressive phrase, he seemed as if he would jump out of his skin: his caresses were incessant, and he could only be restrained by his mistress taking him on

her knee. I soon succeeded in getting all the dead lights out, and we then saw the devastation that had taken place below—tables, chairs, swinging lamp, chests, trunks, and many other things, huddled together, and some smashed to pieces.

We now keenly felt our exhaustion, so that I earnestly wished to get something to refresh my dear wife; but I could not find either bread or anything else at the instant. Soon, however, I laid my hand on a bottle of wine in one of the berths, and forcing in the cork, we each took a small quantity; then, reclining on the after-lockers to repose ourselves a little, we both fell asleep. I suppose I slept some hours, for when I awoke I saw Eliza sitting by me, with Fidele at her side: she had been watching me in my sleep. "Dear Edward," said she, "you have taken a sweet rest: how delightfully the breeze blows in upon us through the cabin windows! I should now be very comfortable if we could find the boat with our companions." I arose, and set about hunting for some biscuit, and found the bag I had intended to throw into the long boat: it was hanging on a nail behind the ladder; and there, at my feet, I saw our two goats, huddled together behind a hammock some one had stowed away in that place the preceding day. I brought the bag joyfully, and we began to eat from it with thankfulness, taking a little sip of the wine now and then, which, in our exhausted state, was a great refreshment and support to us.

We now went upon deck, taking Fidele with us. One of the goats, I was sorry to find, in handling it as we passed, had its hind leg broken: we felt pity for the poor creature, but could not at that instant attend to it; for it occurred to me that the bow of the vessel should be immediately secured by ropes to the rocks, as another hurricane might come on, and blow us out of the creek in which the good providence of God had havened us. There was plenty of rope left

on deck, as sheets, halliards, &c., and with some of these I quickly got on shore, the larboard side of the brig being close to the rock, and made them fast round large blocks of stone.

While I was thus employed, my wife had taken the dead fowls from the coops, and broken some biscuit into small pieces, with which she fed the remaining live ones. "We can eat one of the drowned fowls," I observed; "it will be a good dinner for us, and we want it." "I am not hungry," she replied, "though you must be so; but how can we make a fire?" Here I was at a stand. There were firearms in the cabin, unloaded, and consequently useless. I then bethought myself of the ship's spy-glass, and found it hanging safely in its bracket. "This will do," said I; "the great lens is a burning-glass: I will step on shore with it, and kindle a fire, and you and Fidele shall go with me."

We put a couple of the dead fowls into our bag, with the remains of the biscuit and the bottle of wine; and, by a little help, my dear wife and her dog, both overjoyed, once more trod the welcome earth. We did not proceed far without picking up some dry branches and dead leaves; but, being in the shadow of a high precipice, intercepting the sun's rays to a considerable distance, I carried some of my fuel to a place where he shone, and, unscrewing the spy-glass and taking out the large lens, in a short time I ignited the leaves by converging his rays, and thus kindled a fire. My dear helpmate set to work plucking the fowls, while, by the aid of plenty of dry sticks, I made a large fire, on the embers of which they were to be dressed. "We have no water," she said, "and I am indeed very thirsty." I did not know where to find water on board the brig, and therefore proposed to walk along under the rocks and look for a spring. But she did not like me to go out of her sight, fearing I should be surprised by savages, who might be somewhere about,

though we had not seen any. This idea had not crossed my mind, but, now it was suggested, I confess it made me very uneasy. In consequence, we agreed to dress the fowls as fast as we could, and return on board to eat them, where, perhaps, I might find some water. As soon, therefore, as we thought them eatable, I put them into the bag with the biscuit, and we retraced our steps hastily to the brig, fearing every moment we might be surprised by some of the natives.

On our return to the cabin, I was fortunate in finding water in a teakettle, which had slid into a corner to leeward, under some things, without having been upset. This was a great boon in our present strait ; and, having drank of it greedily, we partook of our dinner with thankfulness.

My first attention was directed to the repelling any attack from the natives, and I lost no time in getting down the three muskets, which were hanging securely in their fastenings. I knew where the captain kept the ball cartridges in his stateroom, which, being on the weather side when the vessel struck upon the rocks, was not blocked up at the door. I tried the flints and loaded the muskets, and placed them on the after-lockers in the cabin, with which preparation for defence I was at present satisfied.

We now set to work to put the furniture and other things in their places, which we very soon accomplished, and I was glad to find there was little damage done to them by being so tossed together. Before evening the cabin looked much as it used to do, and the vessel being in a perfectly safe and quiet inlet, we felt much comfort in the possession of so desirable an asylum.

We again went upon deck to look around for the boat and our companions, but they were not to be seen. To have a more extended view, I went up the fore-rigging, and had not ascended far when I

was enabled to see quite over the sandy beach, which seemed about half a mile broad; and I was delighted to behold an extensive lake, or fine harbour surrounded by land, immediately on the farther side. At the first moment I uttered an exclamation of surprise, and then endeavoured to explain to Eliza what I saw. A confused idea crossed my mind that we were somewhere on the Spanish Main, and on coming down I told her what I thought. "Well, be that as it may," said she, "we have felt that God is gracious, and we will rest entirely upon his providence." I wished her to land again, as I now had firearms, saying we would walk under the rocks to the farther side of the isthmus. "I will do so if you wish it," she replied, "but I think it would be better to defer it until the morning; and, in the mean time, we can do something for the poor goat that has broken its leg, and make some other arrangements here, for which there is much need." I instantly acquiesced, perceiving at once the reasonableness of the suggestion; for I had been impelled to make the proposal by curiosity, and nothing more.

I got the poor goat on deck, and bound up its broken leg in the best way I could; then, bringing up the other, gave them half a dozen plantains, which they ate eagerly.

All our vegetable stock brought from Kingston had been put into the steerage in hampers. Into this place there was a door from under the companion ladder, but there was also a small hatch over it, which had been battened down during the gale, and I was obliged to remove it before I could make my way to anything below. Here were the sailors' berths and chests, and a few yams and plantains which they had provided to eat with their salt meat: they also kept a bag here for biscuits, and supplied it at their pleasure. Our first supply of biscuit was nearly exhausted; but, on finding this,

we gave the remainder in our bag, which was little more than dust, to the fowls and ducks that had survived the storm : their feathers were now dry, and they looked quite cheery. The sun being set, we retired to our cabin, closing the companion door after us. Hitherto we had been satisfied with occasional bursts of gratitude to our heavenly Father for his providential care of us, but now we fell upon our knees, and with our whole souls rendered to Him the due sacrifice of praise and prayer.

We lay down in peace and thankfulness ; but, notwithstanding this happy frame of mind, our slumbers were disturbed by the noises of the preceding night yet ringing in our ears. We arose with the dawn, the cool freshness of which was truly delightful : a couple of oranges, with biscuit, formed our breakfast ; and, still finding water in the teakettle, we drank some of it, mixed with a little wine. " Now, my Eliza," said I, " will you venture on shore, and explore with me the other side of the isthmus ?" " Yes," she replied, " I will go cheerfully." I took two of the muskets, and gave her a boarding-pike to carry as a staff, and to have recourse to for defence, if necessary ; and, with our faithful little dog, we descended at one step from the brig's side to the rock.

We proceeded to cross the isthmus close under the precipitous promontory, when, after walking about two hundred yards, I observed a chasm, in the recess of which our eyes were delighted with the sight of many acacias and some other small trees. Having gained the summit of the sandhill, we suddenly had a distinct view of the fine sheet of water beyond, with land on every side of it. The sea-breeze was faint, and the water but gently stirred by it. It was a charming scene : we stopped a few minutes to gaze on it, and then proceeded to gain the margin of the lake. The rocks continued to be stupendous, but were less precipitous, being wooded

high up with palmettos and other small trees. When we came within about two hundred yards of the beach, they terminated abruptly, presenting a high front to the west, opposite to which lay a low black rock, that stretched itself into the lake nearly one hundred yards, and between these rocky barriers the sand of the isthmus seemed still to spread. When we came to this point we looked round the face of the promontory, and had the inexpressible delight to see, at no great distance, a spring of water gushing forth in an ample stream, clear as crystal. We instantly made towards it, and simultaneously thought of the Israelites in the desert, and we blessed their God and ours, both of us feeling that the gracious words of his mercy were literally verified unto us, giving us "rivers of water in a dry place, and the shadow of a great rock in a weary land."

Fidele was first to taste the pleasant stream; but we quickly joined him, and with the palms of our hands partook of the cool, delicious water with great eagerness. This was a discovery that promised us lasting comfort: we took our seat on a piece of rock close to its source, and felt as if we could never tire in gazing on the spring, as it flowed from its stony bed, running in a clear little stream among some trees that grew between it and the lake.

As we sat in a sort of ecstatic reverie, the dog barked. I seized one of the guns which lay by me; Eliza looked at me earnestly, but with full self-possession; we were on our feet in a moment, and she took up the other gun, holding it in one hand, with the boarding-pike in the other, ready to give me either, as occasion might require. Fidele continued to bark, keeping his head towards the rock a little beyond us. We listened, but could hear nothing; I looked up and all around, but nothing appeared. At last I heard a noise just above us; Fidele scrambled towards the spot; I cocked my gun, fearing some-

thing, I knew not what—a wild beast, perhaps. I had no share in the fight: Fidele killed the creature in an instant; I heard him squeak, but what he was I had no idea. I clambered up into the brushwood where the encounter had taken place, and there saw a large *iguana*, which in superstitious times might have been exhibited as a dragon. I drew him forth with our pike; and as we looked on him with much curiosity, the brave little dog wagged his tail, showing he sought that commendation which was, and ever is, due to valour; and we liberally bestowed it on him. I took up the creature, for I had learned in Jamaica that it was esteemed a great delicacy, eating like chicken.

Trifling as this incident may appear, it had disturbed us not a little; but, after resting a while on the rock, we returned by the way we came to our ship, bringing the *iguana* with us. The loss of the gabbose we did not know how to remedy: we were afraid to light a fire on board without a fireplace, lest we should burn the ship, and we felt unwilling to trust ourselves on shore to cook our victuals; but the last was the least dangerous alternative, and, being armed, we resolved not to allow our late groundless panic to prevent us from adopting it. I accordingly fitted up a place of stones among the rocks, a little beyond the brig's bow, and there kindled a fire in the same way I had done the day before, while my wife got out some tea and sugar, and the metal teapot and a couple of tin mugs that had escaped the smashing effects of the hurricane. I boiled the kettle, then roasted a couple of plantains, and in half an hour we sat down to the most comfortable repast I ever enjoyed. We were thankful to the Author of every bounty, which sense of gratitude is not the least of his best gifts.

During my absence at the fire, Eliza had not neglected to dispense water among our thirsty ducks and fowls, the former of which were in great

want of it; and as she had discovered the bread-locker nearly half full of biscuit, and a bag in it with Indian corn, that had been brought on board to feed the poultry, she gave the poor things a good meal.

We sat below for a few hours in the heat of the day, when we took a survey of our situation, and after the discussion I proceeded to act upon the decisions we had come to. It appeared to me, as the vessel had taken the ground fore and aft where she lay, that there was no hazard of her sinking from any leak in the bottom: nevertheless, if the water were not pumped out, it would continue to rise in her to the level of the sea, and thereby spoil much of the cargo, to which we looked in a great degree for our subsistence and comfort. I therefore fell to in the evening, and pumped for an hour. I resolved to pursue this every day; but, instead of doing it in the evening, to make it my first occupation at break of day, when I was fresh, and the air cool. While I worked at the pump, my wife drew forth part of the fruits and vegetables from the steerage, and dried and aired them on the quarter-deck. I thought the empty coop a good place to put them in, and she arranged them there. One of the water-melons, that had been bruised, was put aside for our refreshment, and we found it cool and pleasant; but we only ate part of it, and, collecting the seeds with much care, reserved the remainder for the next day. Not being accustomed to labour, we were sufficiently fatigued to remain quietly on deck until it was time to go to rest. The eventide is delightful in tropical climates: we sat on one of the hencoops until the stars appeared, enjoying the cool stillness of the air and the varied prospect around us; then we retired to our devotions and to bed.

I arose with the dawn and performed my task at the pump. I would gladly have bathed in the sea after it to refresh myself, but I saw a couple of

sharks, and thought no more of the wished-for luxury. My helpmate did not slumber after I arose, but got up, and, searching all the lockers, found where the saucepans were kept, and many other things, as the salt, pepper, butter, &c., which had been placed there for present use. She also discovered the harness cask, with the salt beef and pork in it; it had been hid from me in the steerage-passage by the ship's awning that was thrown over it. I now took the teakettle, also a large tin cooking vessel with an arched handle, and went to the fountain for a supply of water. We soon got a tea breakfast, so congenial to our former habits.

It had been determined that one of our first objects should be to get some of the seeds of our fruits, and some of the roots, as yams and coccos, into the ground, the late rains having rendered the soil favourable for their reception; but the spades, shovels, and hoes were all among the cargo, and how to get at them I could not devise. To move the bulky casks and other things that filled the hole of the brig would be an Herculean task: they had been shipped in England, and were therefore under what was taken in at Jamaica; but, being articles likely to suffer by pressure, on account of their shafts, I concluded they must be immediately below the lumber. However, there was nothing left but to go to work with perseverance and a good will; so after breakfast I opened the main hatchway, where I saw the boards and shingles stowed close up to the deck. I pulled out a great quantity of the shingles, and then got hold of some of the long planks, four of which I succeeded in drawing on deck. I placed them over the starboard gunwale of the brig, one end resting there, and the other on the sandy beach close to her side. Along these I slid all the boards down upon the beach as fast as I could get them up, and at intervals threw the shingles as far as I could beyond them. In this way I worked hard till twelve o'clock, and was heartily tired.

My wife had kept up the fire on the rocks on the other side, and had made free with a shingle or two to help it: she had put some coccos on to boil, and a couple of plantains to roast, to provide a dinner for us. I was pleased with her care and industry; "but we will eat the iguana, dear," I said; "it is very good." "I do not think I could taste it," she replied, "it looks so hideous; yet, if you eat of it, I will certainly try to do so." I soon prepared the animal, which was not much bigger than a rabbit, and, getting a saucepan out of the locker, cut the creature in pieces, and mixing a little pepper, salt, butter, and flour into small balls, made a stew of it. We sat down to our iguana, and found it exquisite. After our repast we retired below for a few hours, and in talking over matters, I lamented not knowing where the water-casks had been deposited, as I was desirous of putting my hand on the water on board for our culinary purposes, without going for it across the isthmus, having so much other labour before me. So in the afternoon I went down into the hold, and, having cleared away a considerable quantity of the lumber, was enabled to discover what I wanted. I forced the bung out of one of the casks, and, contriving to get the hand-pump into it, pumped a bucket full of water, and bringing it up, poured some out for the poultry. As they hurried to drink, I was glad to observe they were rightly assorted—one gallant cock, poor fellow, now but in shabby attire, with three hens looking but little better. There were also two or three drakes among the ducks; and I was pleased in having thus a prospect of their multiplication when we could trust them on shore to enjoy their liberty. We regaled ourselves at even with the remainder of the watermelon, and, as we had not yet entered upon a rigid economy of our delicacies, we boiled our kettle and finished the day with tea.

Our rest this night was sound and refreshing; the

noises of the storm were no longer in our ears ; we had purchased sleep by the laborious exertions of the day, and were only awakened by the crowing of the cock.

This day was occupied much as the former—in pumping out the ship, and in getting the shingles and deals, and some small squared timber out of the hold upon the beach. My dear wife reminded me that the next day would be the Sabbath, and that as such we must keep it. I blessed God for the consecration of that day, and thanked her for telling me of it, as I was not aware that the week was so nearly expired. We boiled a piece of salt beef and of salt pork to serve us until Monday, and finished the day in thankfulness.

CHAPTER IV.

SUNDAY, 30th December. We awoke with the dawn. The sun arose in majesty, and for a few minutes shone resplendently into the cabin windows ; but when not more than half a degree above the horizon, he was veiled by the high rocky island which lay astern of us, distant about half a mile. After prayer we went upon deck to enjoy the calm coolness of the morning : all was beauty and freshness around ; we blessed God for the profusion of his bounties, and felt the situation in which his providence had placed us as the haven of our rest. We thought, too, upon the storm we had survived with adoring gratitude, lamenting the fate of our rash companions, who, confiding in their own might alone, had distrusted the compassion of the Almighty.

Eliza had brought the prayer-book upon deck,

and opening it she read: "O come, let us give thanks unto the Lord, for he is gracious. The sea roared, and the stormy winds lifted up the waves thereof: we were carried up as it were to heaven, and then down again into the deep: our souls melted within us. Then cried we unto thee, O Lord, and thou didst deliver us out of our distress. Blessed be thy name, who didst not despise the prayer of thy servants, but didst bear our cry and hast saved us. Thou didst send forth thy commandment, and the windy storm ceased and was turned into a calm. Thou, Lord, hast made us glad through the operation of thy hands, and we will triumph in thy praise. Blessed be the Lord God, even the Lord God who only doeth wondrous things, and blessed be the name of his Majesty forever!" Then we both said, in the fulness of our hearts, "Amen! Amen!" and, throwing ourselves on each other's neck, wept tears of joy and gratitude.

About the time the ascending sun looked over the rock upon the vessel's deck, the seabreeze set in, which, blowing into the cabin windows, rendered it more agreeable below than on deck. We therefore descended, and after breakfast determined to show our respect for the day by dressing ourselves in better attire. The trunks were opened, and my beloved wife dressed herself as she would have done at Awbury on a Sunday: I followed her example. We then sat down quietly, and I went through the morning service, she reading the lessons for the day. After this proper and consolatory exercise, we talked to each other about those dear friends we had left behind in England, and often with grateful tenderness reverted to the father of Eliza, to whom both of us were much indebted for the peace we now enjoyed; being separated from all the gayeties of life, but having for our portion God and each other.

It being the winter solstice, or only a few days

after, and the seabreeze blowing fresh, we did not find it unpleasantly hot upon deck ; for, although it was now near noon, the vessel was completely shaded by the promontory. We therefore enjoyed ourselves, sitting arm in arm on the quarter-deck, feeling an internal happiness that scarcely could have been anticipated in such a situation : it was that peace which the world cannot give nor take away, and with which the stranger intermeddeth not. At one o'clock we went below, and took a slight repast by way of dinner ; and, as soon as the high rock which towered over our vessel extended its protecting shade to some distance across the isthmus, my dear wife put on her gipsy hat, and we prepared to go on shore to take a walk. Yet we were somewhat afraid, though we had not seen any traces of inhabitants, neither heard the howlings of wild beasts ; still we did not deem it prudent to venture without some defence. As it was Sunday, I did not choose to carry a gun ; so I bethought me to go to one of my trunks and take out my pistols, which I did, and fastened them to a belt made of a silk pocket-handkerchief ; then, taking a boarding-pike in my hand, and giving Eliza another, to serve at once for a pilgrim's staff and a weapon—thus accoutred, with our faithful little dog, we stepped on shore.

I had observed a grove of cocoanut-trees towards the centre of the isthmus, bearing about north of us. We now proposed to direct our steps to that place, and proceeded for some distance under shadow of the promontory, during which it was very pleasant ; but after we emerged from that friendly shield, the heat became intense, which, added to the disagreeableness of the deep loose sand getting into our shoes, disposed us to return. I perceived, however, we could avoid the latter inconvenience by edging down to the seaside, which we did, and by keeping close to the water's edge, found our footing firm and the

walking pleasant. Proceeding thus quite at ease along the margin of the beach, we often stopped to contemplate the reef on which the brig had struck, and observing the surf now breaking over it, we felt renewed gratitude to God, who had delivered us from a watery grave.

After proceeding about half a mile, we picked up many beautiful shells, which were admirable for their high polish, and I put them into my pocket, one by one, as they presented themselves. Indulging in this amusement, and the contemplation of the objects around us, the evening had imperceptibly crept upon us, so that the sun was setting just as we reached the eminence behind which stood the grove of cocoanuts, and from that point we had a full view of the bright orb of day, making his slow descent behind the land that bounds the lake upon the west. The sight filled us with admiration; and, as his radiance streamed along the sky, we raised our hearts to Him who had made so glorious an object—so glorious, indeed, that men have worshipped him for their Creator—as if, dazzled by his beams, the light of their understanding had been put out, not to perceive that light and darkness, heaven and earth, all are but creatures, the work of thy hands, O God!—self-existing, unseen by the eye of man, yet everywhere visible in thy works, giving life and motion to all created things, and in whom and by whom we live, and move, and have our being.

We returned by the western beach, and, keeping close to the water's edge, walked at a good pace, and soon arrived at the point beyond which the gushing fountain was pouring out its refreshing water; but it being now nearly dark, we could not stop to drink, and hastened across the isthmus and got on board. After resting a little we took some wine and biscuit, and, being refreshed, offered prayer and praise to the Father of Mercies. Having thus spent our first Sab-

bath in the land of our solitude, we tranquilly retired to sleep.

Monday, 31st. The dawn of the next day found me at the pump, which, to my great joy and relief, before half an hour had expired, sucked ; that is, no more water remained within its reach, so that, on ceasing to work it, the air rushed in from above. I now went into the hold, and searched for the boxes containing the spades, hoes, axes, &c., and at last found them stowed athwart-ships, close to the after bulkhead, and, getting a maul and large chisel from the carpenter's chest in the steerage, I forced open their lids. I took out a spade, a hatchet, a felling-axe, and a couple of hoes, when I hastened to the cabin to show my dear wife the proofs of my success. She was alive to every incident that concerned me, and expressed the pleasing emotions she felt by a kind word and a kinder smile as I showed her the spade. We now had breakfast, after which I thought it well to cover up the main hatchway loosely, not being required to work any more at the cargo for the present. I had cleared away all the lumber amidships, but there was still a good deal forward. We cut up a pumpkin with a piece of pork, which I stewed together for our dinner. Then, as before, we took care of the seeds ; and on all future occasions we never omitted to gather up the seeds of our fruits as we used them.

In the afternoon we went on shore to look about for a spot of ground favourable to plant some of the seeds of the watermelon we had eaten a few days before, and also of the pumpkin we had just cut up. I put the hatchet into my belt, and, taking a musket in one hand and my spade in the other, set forth, my guardian angel carrying her pike, while brisk Fidele led the way. I knew that the watermelon required much sun, but the pumpkin less ; that the former would only grow in hot climates, whereas the latter would come to perfection even in the

south of England. I also knew that a sandy soil was favourable to both these plants. I therefore felt I should not seek long without finding proper situations for them; but it must be on the other side of the isthmus, beyond the termination of the promontory, somewhere near the spring of water.

When we had advanced a couple of hundred yards under the precipitous rock, we came to a recess in it, where some thorny acacias and other trees were growing. As we stopped to look in among them, the dog made his way through the thicket, and in a minute or two began barking; when, to our surprise, we presently heard him answered, as we thought, by some other dog, accompanied by strange and loud noises from the same quarter; but as they appeared rather at a distance, we took courage and called Fidele. We repeated our call over and over again, yet he did not come, but continued to bark. The still corresponding sound I guessed to be an echo, and exclaimed to my wife, "Oh! he has got another iguana, I suppose." I then observed to her, "There must be a passage through the thicket some distance, for his barking seems a good way off." While we were talking, his uproarious little voice grew nearer, and soon out brushed an iguana, with his mane erect, dragging his long tail after him like a great snake attached to his posteriors, looking more ugly, if not more horrible, than any creature in the world. Fidele was soon after him, and killed him without any fight, after a run of twenty or thirty yards. I praised our little dog, and patted him, and left the iguana where he lay for the present. "I should like to penetrate through this thicket," I exclaimed; "there may be some issue to the other side of the promontory." I returned instantly on board for a table knife, which I sharpened on a stone, and with it and the hatchet I cleared a narrow path forward.

After working thus about two hours, I found my-

self close to the mouth of a cavern, into which I looked; but, instead of being a dark recess, as such places generally are, I saw a light shining into it, as if from above, with considerable brilliancy. While I was cutting away the trees, my wife remained without the thicket, and kept Fidele by her side; but I now called to her to come forward, and with some difficulty (owing to the inconvenience of her English dress) she got through the thorny avenue. I took her hand, and we stepped into the cavern together. The mouth appeared as large as a small gateway, and thence we saw the sun's rays coming in through an opening opposite, about three or four feet in diameter, and perhaps thirty feet above us. By this opening it was clear that the end of the cavern was close to the farther side of the promontory, at least at this point. We now gazed around, and saw we were in an extensive natural excavation, the floor of which was covered with the dirt and feathers of birds, the summit thickly hung with pendulous stalactites, and the sides were incrustated with shelving masses and nodules of the same. We were now sure that the noises we had heard were the reverberations of our dog's barking, made louder, perhaps, by the flight of birds making their escape through the natural window above. We lingered and looked about a little, but without being able to make any farther observations worth notice, and squeezed our way back through the narrow avenue I had made in the brushwood, being a distance of nearly thirty yards.

We now proceeded round the west end of the promontory to the spring, and crossed over its little run of water by stepping on some small fragments of rock in its bed. The ground was clear of wood for a few yards, but beyond were large trees. We walked under their shade towards the lake for the space of a hundred yards, which brought us out on the south side of the rocky point that separated

this wooded region from the sandy isthmus. We observed that this point, which extended a considerable distance into the lake, was a bare rock, and that there was nothing but sand, mixed with a little earth, between it and the foot of the promontory whence the spring gushed. Having ascertained thus much, we retraced our steps, and I fixed upon a piece of ground between the spring and the southern part of the rock, clear of the shade of trees, for putting in our seeds. On this spot there were reeds, and grasses, and some other slender plants growing; and, from the late rain, and their contiguity to the little brook, they were somewhat luxuriant. I fell to work with my spade, and, turning up the earth here and there in patches of about a foot square, put a couple of melon seeds into some, and as many pumpkin seeds into others. Just as my sowing was finished, the sun set, and warned us to return; but at this moment our attention was arrested by the leaping of fish all round the point. Some appeared so near that I could see they were mullet—such as we had eaten in Jamaica at Mr. Dickinson's table, who then told us a curious fact, viz., that these fish were enticed by a lighted torch in the night to spring into the fishermen's boats; and we now saw them leaping, probably, towards the last rays of the sun. That we had no boat to enable us to catch some of them caused me a little regret, and I expressed it to Eliza. "Are we not fed from Heaven?" she replied: "my Edward, why would you tempt God? Remember the Israelites and the quails." I deserved the reproof. "Thank you, my own better part," said I; "the heart is ever ready to turn against Heaven with impious ingratitude." As we talked we moved homeward, for as yet our vessel was our home. We passed a reflection or two on the cavern in our way, and while we stopped for a minute there, Fidele put us in mind of the iguana, by running to the spot where it lay, and kept guard over his prize till I came

and took it up. I confess I was ravenously hungry after the exertions of the day, and as soon as we got on board I demolished all the stew that had been left at dinner, while my wife prepared our little board for tea. While at tea, among other matters now of high concern to us, that of the unsuitableness of some parts of our dress came under consideration. The most pressing evil to be remedied was the sand filling our shoes. After some deliberation, it was resolved to make canvass gaiters, coming half way up the leg, to be sewed on to our shoes, of which we had a good stock, besides there being a great supply of them on board, forming part of the cargo. I was to substitute a sailor's jacket for my flapping coat, and Eliza a short bedgown for her long wide dress. We finished the day by putting the cabin in order; and, having said our prayers, retired to rest.

Tuesday, 1st January, 1734. Early in the morning I set to cutting away pieces of the torn sails, some of which were hanging about the fore-rigging. I foresaw there would be much use for all the pieces of canvass I could collect; but my present object was a slip for our boots; and, in getting that, I improved the opportunity to obtain some very large pieces—indeed, as much as I could carry at three times, all which I brought aft and laid on the quarter-deck. After breakfast we shaped out our boot-legs: I say we, because it required our united ingenuity to accomplish it. I got some sewing-twine from the sailmaker's box, also a couple of needles, and his palm—a sort of thimble that fits with a strap to the palm of the hand, and which in that way gives more power to push the huge needle through the canvass. With this palm I undertook to sew the canvass gaiters on to the shoes, if my wife would first run them up stoutly behind with one of her largest needles and some strong thread. She immediately set about her part of the task, and, after sitting by her a little while to see the work fairly begun, I

proposed taking the goats on shore and placing them in the cavern, with a few plantains and some Indian corn. As they were very tame, I did not think it probable they would stray away; and as there was a good deal of herbage about the thicket, they would soon learn to subsist themselves, without drawing farther on our little imported stock of grain. I now thought my pistols security enough, put them in my belt, and, having but a short distance to go, concluded my dear companion would remain on board; but she preferred accompanying me, and took her station, with her work, under the shadow of the rock while I was bringing the goats. I carried the lame animal in my arms, and the other jumped after me.

As soon as we entered the avenue of the thicket, the goats began to browse: however, I drove them forward into the cave, where their bleatings caused a great many pigeons to take wing from its sides, and fly out through the aperture at the opposite end. We found the cavern cool and airy, and pronounced it no bad lodging for shipwrecked persons in such a climate.

When we left the cave the goats followed us out of it, but they stayed behind in the thicket to browse. Observing this, and seeing there was plenty of herbage, we did not think it necessary to bring them any more provisions from the ship. Having thus begun to move our livestock, our next essay was to transplant the cock and hens to the same place, it being clear they would never breed in the coop; but with respect to the ducks, we determined to keep them where they were for the present, lest they might take to the water and swim away. Having decided on these weighty matters in our little commonwealth, we retraced our steps to the vessel, and, putting the four fowls in one bag, and some bruised corn in another, returned to the cave, where, after throwing some of the corn on the floor, we let

them out, and were glad to see them picking up their food without any signs of fear, or even disturbance. This was a bold measure, and of so much importance to us in its consequences, that we were not ashamed to ask of God his blessing upon it, as well as upon everything else we undertook. I then brought some water in a bucket, that they might not be induced to stray away to seek for drink. Our goats were meanwhile enjoying themselves among the bushes; but we left this little colony with some trifling anxiety, notwithstanding the security of their situation.

We returned on board, and refreshed ourselves with a couple of the oranges, which we found fully ripe, but now took care of the seeds, which we had neglected to do when we had eaten them before, at a time when we were less collected in mind. My wife then set to work in earnest on the gaiters, and I made up the fire on shore to prepare our dinner: when it was done I brought it on board. By this time she had completed one pair of our sand defences: we sat down comfortably to our fare, and she now made no scruple of eating the iguana, and acknowledged it to be a great delicacy. On this occasion, it being Newyear's-day, we treated ourselves to a glass of wine, having discovered not a few bottles perfectly safe in one of the after-lockers. This little feast being finished, we sat down to resume our work together with great delight. She began upon the other pair of gaiters, while I, with the sailmaker's palm and some of his twine, got on cleverly closing in the tops of her shoes with those she had already prepared. "Edward," said she, after a short silence between us, "as you have frequent occasion to go to and fro from the vessel to the other side of the isthmus, and you know I am never happy when you are out of my sight, could you not contrive a temporary tent on the ridge of the isthmus, whence I could always see you while

on these excursions? And, besides, it would be a convenient place to keep an eye over our goats and poultry; and the cave being near, which we thought so pleasant, we might take some useful things there, and occasionally make our fire and dine there. We should not then be far from the spring; and if you were at work either at the vessel or by the spring, we should be sufficiently near both, and you would not have far to come to rest yourself." I thought the plan a good one, and we decided to put it in execution on the morrow.

Thus, by degrees, we felt our wants, and had reason to be thankful that it was within our power gradually to provide for them. We were not insensible to the mercy and bounty of our heavenly Father: how indeed could we be? it was but one week that day since we hung in awful jeopardy on the reef, amid thunder and lightning, and a fierce tempest of wind, with an overwhelming sea. All these things were commented upon during our work; and one circumstance occurred to both, which seemed very unaccountable, viz., that those seven days appeared, on retrospection, like so many months, while some weeks in our lives had passed away, which seemed, on looking back, but a point in time. But this last week, although the minutes and hours had sped quickly by, from the multitude of objects and the important events it embraced, appeared like a year in duration.

We sat close at our work until nearly sunset, and then went ashore to visit our livestock at the cave: we found them all within, the goats lying on the floor at some little distance from its mouth, and the poultry perched up on one of the stalactic ledges about three feet above them. The interior of the cave was still quite light, and we saw some bluish-coloured pigeons on the lower ledge of the window aperture: they did not fly on our coming in, and we took care not to make any noise to scare them.

I had brought the kettles with me for a supply from the spring, as the water on board was very unpleasant; and, depositing our vessels at the fountain, we penetrated a little farther into the wooded region. We proceeded about half a mile, passing several palm-trees, which I was glad to see, and at last came to an immense silk-cotton-tree, such as we had seen in Jamaica at Mr. Dickinson's pen. At this place the ground appeared clear for a quarter of a mile, with the exception of some Indian figs and aloes here and there, beyond which the trees spread out again in great luxuriance, the mountain cabbage-palm being among them. As we stood a while under the cotton-tree, and looked upon the open space, with the lake before us, we were struck with its eligibility for a permanent dwelling. Pleas- ed with this discovery, we returned, and on our way again saw the mullets leaping about the point. We filled our kettles with the cool clear water, and soon found ourselves safe on board, to close the evening, as usual, with a light repast, prayers, and rest.

Wednesday, 2d. In the morning I was cheered by the crowing of the cock on shore, to whom I soon made a visit, in carrying some of the planks to the intended site of our tent, to lay on the sand for a floor. While thus employed, it struck me that, hav- ing plenty of them, it would be as well, and bet- ter, to construct the tent of planks entirely, rather than to erect uprights and cover them with the ship's awning, which I had first intended, reflecting, that we might yet have storms of wind and rain at this season of the year. I marked out a spot for the building about forty feet clear of the steep side of the promontory, and twelve or fourteen feet be- yond the avenue to the cave, levelling rather more than twelve feet square of the ridge, and laying down twelve planks side by side, which being done, formed a square of twelve feet. I then crossed the ends of these planks with others, which were again

crossed, and so on, after the manner of making the log-houses in America. I formed the door, which was made opposite to the rock, by sawing some of the planks in two, cutting off a bit from each, and placing these half planks instead of whole ones on either side, supported by upright planks for door-posts, the little pieces being placed between the ends of the half planks, to keep them duly asunder; and in this way I made the windows also. As the planks were two inches thick, the building at the sides was an alternation of two inches of plank and two of air; but the corners were solid, and the walls, being a foot thick, had the appearance of a solid mass, except when you looked in a straight line between the planks. The structure was ten feet square within the walls, and eight feet high, and the roof was flat. It took nearly two hundred planks for this small building, and it cost me the labour of four hours every day for a week. I have found some difficulty in describing this wooden palace, for such it was to us; and, to avoid obscurity in the picture, I have departed from my diary way of writing, and given a full account of it at once.

Thursday, 3d. I took the dawn of the morning for two hours' work at the plank house, and, being now in sight, my wife contentedly remained on board. She employed herself in getting up the shaddocks, oranges, limes, and pineapples, with the roots, to air upon deck. The whole store I found spread out when I returned from my morning's work. The sight was glorious; I saw future trees, bearing delicious fruit, hid in the precious heap. I blessed God for his providence in the provision thus made for man—"the herb bearing seed," to be perpetuated for his use. We did not keep the ripe pineapple for a dessert, as great people do, but ate it for breakfast with our tea and biscuit: before it was cut, however, I twisted the top out of it very gradually, so as to bring with it a deep cone of fibres, having

learned at Jamaica that the top so taken out would grow, and become prolific. After breakfast we trudged over the isthmus to the spring, to plant the pinetop near the melons; and I took a hoe in my hand as well as spade, and hoed up the ground all round the seeds I had sown, so that the grass and weeds might be destroyed by the sun. I then chose a spot, far from any shade, in which to plant the pinetop, and, having done so, placed some split shingles round it for security. The day was then at the hottest, and we therefore determined to make another excursion into the wooded region; but we could not pass the fountain without stopping to drink, and our faithful little companion seemed to take equal pleasure in lapping the clear water; nay, even lying down in the stream to enjoy its coolness in every limb. We delighted in seeing his delight, yet rather envied him a luxury which hitherto fear of the sharks had compelled us to deny ourselves. "How much I should like to bathe!" exclaimed Eliza, as Fidele rolled and gladdened in the water; "I wish there were no sharks," she continued; "how comfortable it would be could we refresh ourselves every morning in the sea." "I think, my love," said I, "that I could stoccado in a place from the sea with staves, large enough to afford you that enjoyment without danger. When your wooden tent is finished, I will attempt the bath." "My dear Edward," she replied, "you never lose an opportunity of showing me your immeasurable kindness."

We proceeded under the welcome shade till we arrived at the head of the dell, close to the silk-cotton-tree. During our walk we saw several birds, but observed that none of them sung. There was, however, a dove in the cotton-tree, which attracted our attention by her plaintive note; and, on looking down on the ground before us, we perceived several others pecking happily about, but they fled at our approach. We also heard the screams of paroquets

in the woods beyond, but they were indistinct, and therefore must be distant. We now again surveyed this place with a wistful kind of inspection, and the more we contemplated it, the more we became satisfied that it might be made an eligible spot for our permanent residence. We thought there was ground enough in a little dell between the great tree and the lake for cultivation, though beyond us it was barren and rocky. The situation would be near enough to the spring and to the ship for the supplies we should require from these sources, and, withal, it seemed to be secure and sequestered.

On our return, I lodged the spade and hoe in the cave, and we were pleased to see our goats and fowls well and contented. We threw out some more bruised corn from the bag that we had lodged there, and could not help remarking that either the fowls had acquired extraordinary appetites, or the goats had helped them off with the corn thrown out yesterday. We got on board about two o'clock, and made a cold dinner on salt beef and roasted yams.

As we had now given up all hope of ever seeing our captain and his crew again, I thought there would be no indelicacy in rummaging the captain's cabin, if not his chest, and there I found his quadrant, a spare compass, a little empty keg called a canteen, made to contain about two quarts, with a string to sling it over the shoulder, and a mouth-piece with a cork, so that a person could drink out of the keg when the cork was withdrawn. I also found several other desirable things, among which was a large box of Havana segars. Of all these acquisitions, the keg-canteen presented itself as most immediately important. "This will be a little fountain in the wilderness to us, my Eliza," said I, "when we go to visit the cocoanut grove, or, perhaps, when we venture to explore beyond the northern extremity of the sandy isthmus." She smiled in the way she always did when she saw anything

particularly pleased me, and I then left her to arrange our several newly-discovered comforts; and, stepping on shore again, employed myself for two hours at the plank house. Before the evening closed I had resumed my seat by her side, and night found us, as usual, grateful and happy.

Friday, 4th. On going upon deck at daylight, I saw a large turtle, apparently asleep, close under the stern of the brig. I looked earnestly at the creature, feeling a strong desire to attempt taking such a prize; but I could not swim, and I had no boat, nor other means of getting at it. I was cogitating on the possibility of bestriding a plank, and, with a shingle for a paddle, making an essay with a coil of very small rope, to secure it by one of the fins; but, while I was thus planning, it began to move, and come in towards the beach. I then went down and brought Eliza on deck to see it, but first shut in Fidele below, for fear he might bark and frighten it. We watched it approaching the beach, on which it clambered up a little way with some difficulty, and, after resting a while, we perceived it beginning to scrape out a hole with one of its fore fins: I suspected it was going to deposite its eggs there, and I was right. My intended prize had not got above a couple of yards beyond the water, when I feared it might yet escape me. I looked well about, therefore, to see if there were any sharks in sight, and, finding the coast clear, after some remonstrance from my dear wife, manfully set about the capture.

I landed on the rocks, taking a piece of small rope in my hand with a noose at one end, and, crouching down under the bank and the vessel's bows, came round on the other side unobserved, and got between the turtle and the water. It allowed me to approach without its making any movement, being at that moment in the act of depositing its eggs. I slipped the noose over one of its fore fins, when it instantly started back, and made a vi-

olent effort, by which it would have dragged me, with itself, into the sea, had I not fortunately leaped to the side opposite to the fin round which the noose was drawn, and just as the creature reached the water's edge, by strongly jerking the rope, turned it over on its back. I was then its master, but it struggled resolutely to recover its position. I then sat down deliberately on it, and, in spite of its flapping, kept it on its back. My wife, who was ever ready to help, was quickly at my side to give every assistance in her power. I sent her to bring a longer and stronger rope from the vessel, which she did; and, having secured it to the other fin, I desired her to fasten it round as many of the planks and pieces of timber on the beach as she could. This she accomplished very well, and I tried to haul our captive up the bank, but it proved too heavy; and, in my making the attempt, it recovered its natural position, and succeeded in dragging down the planks several feet. It was now close to the water. I ran up to the planks, therefore, heaping one upon another over the rope until I opposed a weight sufficient again to hold the turtle. I now thought it would be best to kill it, but I had no sooner so decided than it drew in its head (the neck being the only vulnerable part), and I could not venture a stroke. The idea of wounding or maiming the creature without killing it was revolting to my feelings. I knew it was now safe, and therefore had time to go systematically to work. I got a double-block purchase from the ship, and making a rope fast round all the timber on the shore, I attached one end of the purchase to the bight of that rope, and the other to the rope about the fin; and, although the turtle was probably quite two hundred pounds in weight, I bowsed it up high and dry some yards upon the beach.

I had now secured my prize, but what was to be done with it? We surveyed it for some time si-

lently: "I do not like that you should kill the poor animal," said my kind-hearted Eliza; "we have provisions enough, and we can subsist very well without taking its life." "We will discuss that, dearest," said I, "by-and-by: let us now go on board and get some breakfast, for I am heartily fatigued." At breakfast we talked the matter over. She pleaded earnestly for the poor thing, and I could not but respect the sentiment; yet, although we had indeed plenty of food, it was not of the kind most wholesome to subsist entirely upon: our health required fresh provisions, and we could not expect Fidele would bring us an iguana every day; nor durst we think of deriving any help from our livestock for some time to come—they must first breed, and the young ones grow. I urged all these arguments against her humane persuasions, and at last, after a few moments' silence, she said, "Well, then, I suppose it ought to be killed; but, Edward, I have my doubts about your doing it." "Oh yes," I answered, "I will see to that presently." I went and found a large dinner-knife, and, having sharpened it well to cut off the turtle's head, left my wife on board, and proceeded resolutely to the place where it lay. As I tucked up my shirt sleeves to prevent the blood from staining them, and brandished my knife as the creature's head lay stretched forth from its shell, I felt so like an assassin about to commit his first crime, that nature recoiled within me: my hand trembled, my blood crept, and a cold dampness came out on my forehead and in the palms of my hands. I could not have cut off the head of the poor animal at that moment for the universe: a guilty shame seemed to hang over me; and, after a little contention with it, I retraced my steps to the vessel. Eliza had never seen me look as I then did—no doubt like a thief taken in the act, or, perhaps, not unlike a condemned criminal. "You repent, then, Edward, I see," said she, "having killed the

poor beast." "No, my blessed angel," I replied, putting down the knife, "I could not do it! I never took the life of anything in such a way: the best feelings of my nature interposed, and thy kind spirit! We will let the creature go." She took me at my word; and, with Fidele, we hastened to the beach, unbound the noose, and gladly watched the poor turtle make its way, though with fear and precipitation, into the sea. "Now, my honoured husband," said she, "you are doubly dear to me! God will bless you for this act of forbearance." "Indeed, indeed," I replied, "I feel no less guilty than if I had killed the poor creature, for I had every inclination to do so." "Yes," she replied, "it was reason that prompted you to kill it, but feeling forbade you: it is well, for once, that feeling has been right; for most frequently reason is the just judge, and feeling the offender." We contemplated our released captive until it was nearly out of sight, and then returned on board with a delight at heart that could not have been imparted by the finest turtle feast in the universe.

In the cool of the evening I proposed that we should transfer some more of the creatures from our ark to the shore, and begin with placing a duck and a drake (though at considerable risk) with our fowls. They were accordingly taken from the coop and put into a bag, Eliza undertaking to see them ashore; and, while I was pursuing my afternoon's task at the plank house, she came out of the thicket to tell me all our little colony was safe, and that, when she threw some corn on the floor of the cave, four or five pigeons flew down and fed with the poultry. This explained the mystery of the fowls' great appetites. She had taken the rind of a shaddock with her for the goats, and, though very bitter, they ate it greedily from her hand. I was pleased to see her delighted with her occupation, and surveying her dumb companions with much satisfaction and complacency.

As evening closed in I was too tired to propose a walk ; so we retired on board, and at the usual hour betook ourselves to rest.

Saturday, 5th. In the morning early, I went down to the beach where the scene with the turtle had taken place, to look for some of its eggs. They had all been crushed in the conflict except four, and these I brought on board : they seemed filled with yolk, covered by a semitransparent skin. I presented them to my wife, who immediately decided on making a pudding with them for dinner, there being plenty of flour and raisins among our ship's stores. I liked her proposal, and did justice to the good old English dish when it was set before us. In the afternoon I went forth again to my building labours, she and Fidele, as before, amusing themselves at the thicket while I worked. After I had finished for the day, we went with our kettles to the spring for water, the morrow being the Sabbath ; and, observing something near the shore, we walked down, and perceived a large fish, about the size of a cod, close in, pursuing some small fry. I instantly caught the boarding-pike from my wife's hand (she always carried it when on our rambles), and, transfixing the fish with it between the shoulders, turned it out of the water upon the sand : we both rejoiced at our good fortune, and, pushing the pike through its gills, I carried it over my shoulder in triumph. We took up the kettles of water in our return to the vessel, Fidele leaping gayly after us, and laid our prize down on the deck. It seemed something like a cod-fish, though certainly a different fish : however, I had no doubt of its being good for food. While examining it, I could not help saying to my wife, " How is it, dear Eliza, that we have killed this fish without any compunction—nay, on the contrary, rejoicing in the achievement, and yet could not find it in our hearts to take the life of the turtle ? " " I do not know," she replied ; " but surely there are nice points of feeling,

which regulate our conduct in a way that we cannot always detect or explain. I think the one looked so like a deliberate murder, that our hearts recoiled at the contemplation of the act." "I believe," rejoined I, "you have solved the difficulty; for, really, as far as the fish and turtle are concerned, the last had as much right to his life and liberty as the first." Now a little hesitation arose about cooking our prize on the morrow, it being Sunday; but, as it would not keep for two days, we thought we should be excusable in doing it.

Sunday, 6th. We performed our ablutions with the rising sun, and went to prayer. It was the Lord's day, and we desired to dedicate it to Him as perfectly as creatures in the body could do: we also wished to honour it a little in our appearance, by putting on better apparel. Our canvass-legged boots, however, could not, without inconvenience, give place to shoes and large buckles; but I put on a coat, and Eliza gave a graceful appearance to the short dimity bedgown she wore by throwing a long scarf shawl over one shoulder, passing it round the waist, with the ends hanging down a little before. She remarked it were vain to attempt saving her complexion in this climate; and, finding the sides of her hat in the way among the trees and bushes, she had made up a turban with some muslin and a strip of red bunting, which gave her quite an Asiatic cast. Thus habited, after breakfast we visited our colony at the cave, and returned to our Sabbath-morning devotions by reading the service of the Church. In the second lesson we were struck with the truth and simplicity of our blessed Saviour's words, "The kingdom of Heaven cometh not with observation, for the kingdom of God is within you." "Yes, my dear Edward," said she, "that is when our spirit bears witness with his Spirit that we are the children of God." Our devotions being finished, I proceeded to boil our fish, my scruples of conscience on the subject having been laid at rest. It was large

enough to dine a dozen, and I believe a dozen ate of it: Fidele played his part, and the remainder being given to the ducks in the coop, they devoured it greedily.

In the afternoon we proposed to take a long walk to the southern extremity of the isthmus; so, slinging the captain's canteen over my shoulder, and placing my pistols in my belt, with my pike in hand, and my wife with hers, followed by Fidele, we first proceeded to the fountain to fill the canteen with water, and then shaped our course along the western side of the isthmus, by the border of the lake. Finding ourselves soon parallel with the cocoanut grove, we turned up from the beach to take a second view of it. The trees were lofty, and many thickly hung with fruit. Some of the nuts lay among the sand, a few of which had burst the outer shell, and showed a vigorous shoot coming forth from a small aperture at one end of the nut. "I will collect some of these another day," said I, "to plant at our end of the isthmus, and then I will endeavour to get a few of the young nuts from the tree; for we must not eat the old ones, their kernels being hard and indigestible."

Looking around, I observed that, in process of time, the decay of the wild vegetation had rendered the soil pretty good about the cocoanut grove, so that we decided on putting in some of our seeds there. We again descended to the beach, and bent our course observingly along to the northward, skirting the sandy isthmus on the west. Not far from its termination we arrived at a low sandy point, to the right of which was a small bay, at the bottom of which rose a steep rock, projecting into the water, with a bold front directly opposite to us. The west side of this bay curved out also towards a rocky point at the extremity, while its gradual slope, beautifully wooded down to the water's edge, rose somewhat abruptly at a little distance from the shore, exhibiting from thence a thick forest, covering the lofty

hills that formed the remote background. We stood a while admiring this new scenery, rendered more interesting by the evolutions of a flock of gulls (those inhabitants of every sea), in pursuit of the small fish leaping and sparkling in the water even close to the beach. It was but a short walk to the bold rock in the bosom of the bay, and we proceeded to it, much amused with Fidele trying to catch the sprats or anchovies, or whatever they were, that swarmed upon the coast. We soon reached the rock, which appeared to be forty or fifty feet high; but, as it projected perpendicularly into the deep water, there was no passing it, and we sat down upon a large stone near its base, glad to rest ourselves. When a little cooled from our exercise, we took a draught of water from our canteen, which we found grateful and refreshing. Our eyes were now arrested by our own noble promontory, which stood right over against us, distant about three miles to the south, and we both exclaimed at once, "What a magnificent object it is!" The loftiest summit, immediately over our vessel, appeared to be at least three or four hundred feet high; while the lower part, to the westward, looked like a rugged chasm. Beyond that, farther again to the west, the cliff rose in a conical form to at least two hundred and fifty feet. The highest summit seemed entirely naked of trees, but this hill was wooded to the top; and by its figure and verdure, associated with the image of the cool spring at its foot, and the commanding aspect of its more barren neighbour, presented altogether a picture of great grandeur and beauty.

After resting a reasonable time, we determined to cross the isthmus and return by the eastern beach, which extended about half a mile to a low projecting rocky point—the very one on which the brig had nearly struck soon after her release from the reef. In about a quarter of an hour after resuming our walk we were on the eastern side of the isthmus.

having had a beautiful sylvan bank all the way on our left. Thus, and in the full enjoyment of peace, youth, and health, we proceeded homeward, only stopping now and then to pick up a beautiful shell which lay in our way, and arrived at the vessel a little after sunset. Too tired to make tea, we regaled ourselves with a little wine and water and some biscuit, and then, kneeling down in the presence of God, rendered to Him that which is justly his due—the sacrifice of praise, and prayer, and thanksgiving, and retired to rest.

Monday, 7th. I set to work hard upon the plank house, and, having before carried all the materials to the spot, was now exclusively occupied with its construction. I kept at my task nearly the whole day, with my wife and Fidele beside me; and, as the promontory shaded us, the air was not unpleasantly hot any part of the time.

Tuesday, 8th. We kept close at our work upon the ridge, and were both delighted to see it drawing to a close. On Wednesday, the 9th, I got the roof on, and before sunset had the satisfaction to see the building completed. With beef and biscuit for our dinner, and our canteen replenished from the spring, we sat down on the floor of our new dwelling, and regaled ourselves cheerily. Fidele and the goats were of the party, he eating of our general fare, and the goats coming now and then for a piece of biscuit, which they took familiarly from the hand. We kept them, however, on the outside of the door, not wishing to teach them the habit of coming in. I was overjoyed at the completion of my task, which I had found much more laborious than we had first expected. My dear wife thanked me over and over again for what I had done, as it had been undertaken at her suggestion; and thus well repaid for all my labour, although much fatigued, I returned with a jocund step to the ship, and, after our constant practice of kneeling in prayer, retired to enjoy the sweets of well-earned sleep.

CHAPTER V.

THURSDAY, 10th January. I employed the early part of this morning in arranging matters on board ; but, before securing the main hatchway, I got up some half-inch board and a plank, to make a table at my leisure for the tent. We talked over our intended operations at breakfast, and it was resolved to put some seeds and roots into the ground without loss of time, by which we hoped to propagate every vegetable we had except the plantain, in which we found no seeds. We looked over our store of fruit and roots, therefore, and found them all sound save one muskmelon, which had been a little bruised, and was beginning to spoil. I now proposed going on shore ; and, taking a couple of chairs from the cabin, and our muskmelon, we marched up to the plank house. I felt not a little important when the two chairs were placed in the new building : there was, indeed, a manifest exultation felt by us both at the moment we seated ourselves for the first time under the roof of a building made with my own hands. After a brief period, Eliza went to the cave to feed the poultry, and I to get the spade and hoe. The fowls were there, but we could see neither ducks nor goats : I confess we were agitated, if not alarmed, and I more especially, thinking they were lost. "Don't fear, Edward," said she, "we shall find them ; the poor things are only gone to seek something to drink ; you perceive there is no water in the bucket." We accordingly hastened to the spring, where we found the stragglers, and were thus relieved from our anxiety. We first thought of driving them directly back to the thicket ; but, as I was to be gardening near during the best part of the day,

they were allowed to remain and feed where they were.

By sunset I had put in several melon seeds of both sorts, and also seeds of the pumpkin, and turned up and hoed a nice spot of ground in the neighbourhood of the spring. We were glad to see the pine-top look well, and I watered it after putting some more good earth round it. We now drove the goats and ducks up to the cave, and in this operation Fidele acted a conspicuous part, which pleased us much, as we foresaw the use our little friend and companion might be to us in bringing "our flocks and herds home at eventide."

The sun did not set with its usual beauty this evening: the western horizon was overcast, and there had been little seabreeze all the day. We loitered for some time in the vicinity of our new habitation, treating the goats with the rind of our muskmelon. The sky, meanwhile, became completely overcast: the goats suddenly deserted us, uttering an unusual cry, and ran into the thicket. Apprehending rain, we hastened towards our vessel, but had scarcely set forth before it came down in torrents, so that we were wet to the skin in two minutes. At this time there was not a breath of wind, and it had suddenly become quite dark. We got on board with difficulty, not only drenched, but much fatigued, with poor Fidele, like a drowned rat, following us. As we went below, I pulled the top of the companion over, but there was already much water in the steerage-passage: it was, besides, quite dark in the cabin, and, from our being very wet, the want of light made us doubly uncomfortable. I drew the charge from one of my pistols, and struck fire in the pan, so as to ignite some paper placed on a plate upon the table; and, keeping the flame up with a few torn pieces for a minute or two, my wife brought a candle from the locker, which we lighted, and then gladly proceeded to change our clothes, the rain mean-

while continuing to fall in a deluge upon the deck, as if the very sky were coming down. We took off our dripping clothes, and put on our light night-things; and, having done this, we only said "God preserve us!" and went to bed, leaving the candle burning in a candlestick standing on the plate. We could not sleep, the falling rain beat so heavily on the deck; but there was no wind. "Edward," said my dear wife, "we shall have another hurricane; let us put in the dead-lights." "There can be no occasion for them, my love," I replied; "we have no sea to encounter here: we are in a secure and protected harbour." "Oh! I know," resumed she, tremblingly, "that it will soon begin to thunder and lighten, and blow a tempest; and it will be dreadful!" "Well, but, my own," I replied, "we are safe; and you express more fear than when we really were in danger." She sobbed. "You weep, Eliza," I said to her; "what is the matter?" "We have gone to bed, Edward," exclaimed she, "when most called upon, without praying to that God who hath hitherto been to us a father." I felt the justice of the reproof; and, embracing her with respondent tears, we rose upon our knees, and implored forgiveness and protection: we then lay down in peace.

The rain continued to pour in torrents, and soon we heard the howling of the wind; but, as it did not come in at the cabin windows, I concluded it was from the west. It soon began to howl tremendously, and I feared every moment that the brig would break adrift, as it blew right ahead, and the ropes by which she was made fast to the rocks were very slender. At last I could no longer continue in bed. I therefore got up, and went to look out at the companion door; but the wind and rain drove so furiously in my face, and it was so dark withal, that I could see nothing. After a while the rain ceased, but the wind, if we could judge by its roaring noise, blew still more violently. I listened attentively to

every sound, to distinguish, if possible, whether the ropes were giving way; and I got up from my seat several times, to endeavour to see from the cabin windows whether we were yet snug in our harbour. I threw one of them open, to enable me the better to ascertain our situation; but I could discern nothing but the water, covered with a sort of phosphorescent light: it could not be from anything else, for the heavens were all darkness above. No rest visited our eyelids; and in this suspense, I may say agony, we remained till daylight, the dawn of which was indeed gladness to our hearts, and our ease was complete on discovering that we remained unmoved in our safe situation. The wind lulled, but the rain continued to pour down unceasingly. I was glad, however, to throw open the cabin windows, as the air had become very close and oppressive. On looking out, I could see little change in the scene around us: the wind had blown from the northward and westward, and, as we lay under the lee of the sandbanks, the water was quite smooth beyond us, and nothing was to be seen floating on it. My first business was to get a swab and empty bucket, and swab up into it all the wet in the steerage and cabin. The rain had now ceased: I therefore set open the companion doors, and, the windows of the cabin being already open, a thorough draught soon dried all below.

The weather continued unsettled; and, as we foresaw more squalls of wind, with rain, Eliza remained on board to prepare a cold breakfast, while I set forth to see to the state of our livestock on shore, and, with much apprehension, for its fate, to reconnoitre the plank house that had cost me so much labour. I took some corn with me, and was glad to find the goats and fowls in the cave, and the ducks safe outside, there being a sort of ledge before it which they could not ascend. I scattered some of the corn about, and in an instant a whole flock of

pigeons flew down from the interior of the cave, and began to feed among the goats and poultry, the fowls now and then startling them from their feast by pecking them ; but, as no hostile hand had ever been raised against them, they evinced no more fear of me than of the animals, and, as they were the prior possessors of the island, I did not grudge them a share of what was going. I then turned to examine the plank house, and was rejoiced to find it standing uninjured, excepting that two of the planks on the eastern part of the roof had been blown off, and were lying on the sand near it. I now hastened back to the vessel, lest my dear wife should be uneasy, and told her that all was well, but that it looked black around, and we might expect more bad weather. She was feeding the ducks in the coop when I came on board, and Fidele, her faithful squire, was helping her in the best way he could, by eating the larger pieces of biscuit, such as he might think would choke the poultry. We now went down to breakfast, after which we considered how we could employ our time to the best purpose on board, as the weather would preclude our doing anything on shore. I thought it right, however, to inspect the ropes which fastened the brig to the rocks, and gladly found they had not been stranded in any part : the fact was, the vessel was hard and fast in the sand fore and aft, and was therefore immovable. I next took a spell at the pumps, and it was an hour before they sucked ; so that I perceived I must not neglect this operation. After this I took the boards into the cabin, and, having the carpenter's chest at my command, resolved to employ myself in making the small table for the house on shore, while my wife occupied herself with her needle on a pair of new boot-legs.

During these labours the rain came down again in torrents, sometimes with squalls of wind, and at other times with thunder ; but we now felt secure, so that we worked and talked cheerfully. We dis-

cussed our prospects, and all that we proposed to do ; and it seemed as if our minds at this time were altogether engrossed with "bettering ourselves in life"—that principle of action which follows man even into solitude. To dig, plant, and sow were the objects claiming our first attention, the ground being well soaked with rain. We talked over, therefore, how and where I should put in the yams and coccos, plant the Indian corn, the fruit seeds, &c. My table needed not be very elegant, so I got on apace with it, while Eliza worked as briskly at the boot-legs ; and, being only interrupted by our short repasts, and now and then listening to the storm, we kept on industriously till night, and finished our tasks together.

I took a look upon deck before it was dark, and saw the sky still threatening ; and, shutting the companion close, returned below. We knelt down together in prayer, and then retired to rest, which we were so happy as to find, notwithstanding the increasing violence of the storm, during which we slept soundly, and arose at dawn perfectly refreshed.

Saturday, 12th. This morning I again visited our stock and the plank house, and found all well. We employed ourselves during the greater part of the day, the weather continuing bad, in various useful operations. Of necessity we had become our own boot-makers, tailors, and sempstresses ; but another occupation was now forced on our attention, the contemplation of which was certainly not very agreeable, viz., washing. Eliza had never washed even a lawn cap, though some young gentlewomen, more dainty about their headdress without than within, consume no small time with starch and pinders ; but my little wife had left all this to the maids ; and, indeed, her delicate hands were quite unfit for the employment. I offered to manage the whole affair for her ; but she said "it was woman's work, and therefore her duty." "Nay," answered

I, "we can here make customs for ourselves. We will, then, superintend together; and I will make two washerwomen, which you and I will cause to do all the labour." "Indeed!" said she, smiling, "if you accomplish this, I shall tell it as a real 'Tale of a Tub!'"* I laughed at her allusion to the Dean's allegory, and instantly, without explaining myself farther, set about planning my two wooden domestics. I kept in my mind's eye a battledoor, and formed one of a piece of board, and then another of the same material, rather less. When finished, I put the small one into her hand, retaining the other myself. "I will show you," said I, "how, on a smooth stone in the run of the spring, we can cause these wooden-headed damsels to beat our clothes as cleverly and as clean as if they were the best laundresses in Bristol; and we shall then bleach and dry them in the sun." "Excellent, Edward!" cried she; "I never should have thought of such an expedient." "Nor I, perhaps," I replied, "if I had not heard that the people in most hot countries wash in this manner."

Towards evening it cleared up, and we were delighted to see a bright and tranquil sky. I hastened to make a fire on shore, that we might boil our tea-kettle. Eliza set the tea-things on my newly-made table, as a compliment to me, and I was not insensible to the attention, trifling as it may appear; but such are the pivots on which the happiness of married life turns. She saw I was pleased with what she had done, and, with this little additional excitement to an habitual happy feeling, we sat down to our refreshing meal, and then disembarked with Fidele.

The sand was firm everywhere from the rain, so that we could have walked pleasantly without our boots. We looked at the stock, and passed over to the other side of the isthmus. The fountain was

* The title of one of Dean Swift's works.

gushing impetuously into the brook it formed, which now ran like a small river into the lake. There was a good deal of seaweed, such as sailors call Gulf-weed, thrown on the beach, together with sea-fans, coarse sponges, reeds, and some shells, but we did not stop to gather any of them. I filled the canteen with fresh water from the spring, and, taking a look at the cave and its inmates, and also at the plank house, we returned on board the vessel to rest.

CHAPTER VI.

SUNDAY, 13th January. The dawn was auspicious, and we hastened on deck to greet the rising sun, as his glowing chariot rested gorgeously on the wave, his bright newborn beams lighting up the sky and gleaming on the waters, and his cheering warmth, of which we had been for some days bereft, gladdening our hearts. We watched him slowly emerging from the ocean with joy and admiration, and then, raising our thoughts from this sublime image to the mighty God who had created it, we offered praise and thanksgiving to the only object of worship for all the wonderful bounties of his providence.

We dressed ourselves as usual for the Sabbath, and read the morning service. As we went out to walk, we were amused with the various deposits on the beach which the waves had thrown up during the tempest. Fidele also was busy at the water's edge, knocking about among the drift weed ; and we observed him attempting to lay hold of something stirring there, but quickly jumping away and barking, and then returning to the assault again. I took

the pike from Eliza's hand, and, removing some of the weed, descried an immense crayfish : it was in the act of devouring a fish that had been stranded by the storm. I thrust the end of my pike into the claw, which it held up as if in defence against the menaces of the dog, and happy for him it did not catch him by the nose, for it instantly clutched the iron point of my weapon, and kept hold so firmly that by it I dragged my prize out of the water safe upon the beach. This creature was well defended with spinous projections from its back and sides, and two large horns growing from its head, besides having two great claws like those of a lobster, which crayfish ordinarily want. Fidele would have attacked his formidable antagonist again, but my wife wisely caught the little Nimrod by the ear and held him fast, while I secured our captive by tying its claws with my handkerchief. We then returned to the ship, not a little pleased with our good fortune, and passed the remainder of the day in devotional exercises and innocent recreations.

Monday, 14th. The morning proved fine, and the weather appeared settled. We agreed now to land all the ducks ; so we took them, eight in number, male and female, in two bags up to the cave, where they were greeted by their feathered kindred with loud and continued quacking. I left my wife there to feed the stock, while I went back to the vessel for the table I had made for the tent ; and, taking advantage of it to stand on, I replaced the two planks that had been blown from the roof by the storm. We then returned to the vessel, and, while my wife was preparing breakfast, I selected half a dozen yams and two dozen coccos, which I put into a sack, and with my spade and an axe set out for the cocoanut grove, Eliza carrying a little basket with provisions and her boarding-pike, and Fidele following. The sand was firm, and the walking good all the way, so that we reached the spot in

about half an hour. We set down our things under the shade of three cocoanut-trees that stood close together under the rocky part of the ridge, and on a ledge of it we found a convenient seat. My first operation was to cut down one of the trees on the south side of the grove, where they were all laden with fruit of different sizes, and I chose the one that seemed the most in the way of my plantation, as the quantity of good ground at this place was very small. My axe being new, I soon felled the tree, and as it dropped, Eliza was at my side. I cut off the cocoanuts, twenty-eight in number, which she undertook to carry, one by one, to the ledge where our basket had been deposited. I now went to work with my spade, and was glad to find the soil tolerably good. As I proceeded I had to take up several young trees, and was pretty well fatigued by a couple of hours of such work. My dear wife had not carried above half the cocoanuts before she was heartily tired too; and, seating herself on the ledge, under the shadow of the rock, she spread out our frugal meal, and called me to it. I came at her summons, and, after eating a little of what she had prepared, split the husks off a couple of young cocoanuts, and piercing them at the top, emptied their delicious milk into a tin cup she had brought in the basket. I tasted it and handed it to her, and as she drank, she every now and then exclaimed, "How nice! how cool! how delicious!" I now cut off the tops of the nuts, and found a soft agreeable substance adhering to the sides, which we scooped out and ate.

After the heat of the day had passed I went to my spade again, and before evening had turned up a long, narrow strip of tolerable ground on the southern margin of the grove, and had put in the yams in one part and the cocos in the other. My wife also had brought melon and pumpkin seeds with her, and diligently sowed them wherever I directed as a fit

spot. We thus finished our task, and were glad. But grateful satisfaction gave a farther stimulus to exertion, and I clove the husks from half a dozen cocoanuts, and put the nuts into our sack. I emptied the canteen on the spots where the muskmelon seeds had been put in, and, not choosing to lose any part of our labour, bundled up some of the young cocoanut-trees I had uprooted, and gathering together the fragments of our provisions, we trudged back to the plank house, where we arrived a little before sunset. I was certainly very tired, but I would not go on board until I had planted four of the trees round the house, one at each end to the east and west, and two behind to the north. The stars were out when this last work was completed, and so wearied were we, that, without looking at our stock, we crawled on board, leaving all our burdens at the plank house. Here we took some refreshments, and, after a short but fervent prayer, retired to rest.

Tuesday, 15th. I was very stiff in the morning, and my dear wife also felt the effects of her fatigue; but we got up and went upon deck, and after a thorough ablution with seawater, found ourselves greatly refreshed. We walked up to the plank house before breakfast to visit our stock, and found it chiefly outside of the thicket, ready to greet us. As there was nothing to close the house against their entrance, the goats and fowls had made free with the yams and biscuit left there in the basket the night before. I could not now feel that my building was completed until I had remedied this evil; therefore, when we returned on board to breakfast, and while my wife was preparing it, I opened the main hatchway and got up some laths, and, taking the door off the captain's stateroom, laid them all in order, and soon after carried them on shore. I nailed the laths outside across the windows, at the distance of about four inches apart, and then endeavoured to fit in the door; but it was neither high enough nor broad

enough, so that I was obliged to place a board erect joined to one of the side-posts, narrowing the portal to exactly the size of the door. The hinges I nailed to the post, and then filled up the vacant space above the door with another strip of board. This was all done by two o'clock ; and my wife was no less surprised than pleased to see our palace now a castle, into which nothing could intrude.

Having thus improved our residence on shore, I felt disposed to do something more, and after dinner I put up a couple of boards for shelves on the side opposite the door, by pushing the ends between two of the planks that formed the eastern and western walls. I next proceeded to make what would serve for a seat, a settee, a bed, or a dresser, as the case might be, choosing the west end of the building as best suited for the purpose, because the sea-breeze blew in at the opposite quarter ; so, taking three planks, I thrust them through, side by side, between those of the building, and thus formed a seat, or whatever else it might be used for, under the western window. I still went on, and laid six planks of similar dimensions lengthways along the front of the house, fastening them in their place by driving wooden wedges into the sand at their extremities and along the outer side. I had finished all this before sunset, and was quite exulted at what I had accomplished. My wife, meanwhile, made several trips to the vessel, and brought up many things from the lockers for kitchen and table use ; and, in rummaging about, she fortunately found the tinderbox, steel, and flint, together with some matches and a roll of brimstone, all in a small canvass bag. This was, indeed, a great acquisition. She had stumbled over the crayfish in the steerage-passage, where I had put it on bringing it on board, and which both she and I had forgot in our late hurry and bustle ; but she now placed it in the basket and brought it on shore, where it was soon consigned to the pot, to be in readiness

for our supper. We next mustered the stock, and found them all there ; after which, closing our house, we returned to the vessel, taking out the crayfish from the pot on our way down, though we ate but a small portion of it at supper, finding it rather strong while hot. However, we were otherwise well supplied, or, at least, to our satisfaction ; and, after returning thanks, we retired to rest.

Wednesday, 16th. I employed the early part of the morning in placing some fragments of rock together, resting them against the foot of the promontory, so as to make a cooking place a little to leeward of the plank house. Having accomplished this, I cut up some of the sticks and branches taken from the thicket in clearing the avenue to the cave, struck a light with the tinder-box, and kindled a fire. My burning-glass and gunpowder were thenceforth released from that duty, and I therefore replaced the large lens in the spyglass, and hung it up in the plank house. The goats and poultry were moving about between our habitation and the thicket, and my wife threw them some corn. It was very pleasing to us, as we sat at breakfast, to see them thus domesticated, enjoying themselves close to our door. The lame goat seemed quite recovered from her accident, which induced me to undo the bandage and take off the splints by which we had secured the broken bone.

I now put my pistols into my belt, and with spade and hatchet, accompanied by Eliza and her dog, set out for the open land beyond the silk-cotton-tree, to make a plantation there ; for none of the situations near our abode were very good, and I thought it advisable not to confine our roots and seeds to one place. My dear wife, as usual, took a basket with provisions, and with her pike for a pilgrim's staff, we proceeded on our way. While filling our canteen at the fountain (our always momentary halting-place), Fidele started an iguana, and presently killed

it. This was an acceptable feat on the part of our little friend, for a fresh meal was a fresh spring of health to us. I deposited the creature under a fragment of rock, and we went on through the wood. On our way we observed several sorts of trees, all strangers to me, and many of which were magnificent; while others, less stately, with their wide-spreading branches cast a delightful shade over our path. There were also many shrubs with flowers, and we were delighted with a beautiful little bird on vibratory wing, sucking the nectar from the bottom of one of them. As we approached the silk-cotton-tree grounds, we found the Indian fig, or prickly pear as it is called in Jamaica, growing in great abundance, the fruit of which appeared quite ripe, some being yellow, and some of a bright crimson colour. I was much disposed to taste them; but, on attempting to peel, or even to pull them, the spines or prickles with which they are thickly beset forced me to desist. These figs grow round a projecting point of the promontory, that partially separates the woodland region from the silk-cotton-tree grounds.

From this spot we soon arrived at the great tree, and laid down our burdens at its foot, between two of the large spurs, which extended from the trunk in such a way as to divide the space round it into compartments, separated by these spurs, some of which rose four or five feet on the stem, gradually sloping down as they diverged from it. I now stripped off my jacket, and fell to digging where I found the soil good and not very shallow. Thus I continued for a couple of hours; but the sun having by that time full power, I ceased a while, to rest and cool myself. I now became aware that all my work here must be done early in the morning, seeing that the sun would continue to shine upon the place from this time until he set. I therefore gave up the idea of any more spade husbandry this day, and contented myself with putting in some pumpkin

and melon seeds where I had dug, and also some pips of oranges and limes in spots here and there, on the skirts of the wooded region.

About one o'clock we shifted our position to the north side of the cotton-tree, the shade there being complete; and then, spreading out the contents of our basket, we did great justice to the crayfish, by the help of a lime and a few capsicums. After we had dined I felt unusually indisposed for exertion, and was not quite pleased with myself for the bad arrangements I had made for the day. But my dear wife consoled me by saying a thousand agreeable things, and reminded me of my great exploit the day before, and then sung to me my favourite little air, "Oh! how sweet the shady bower." The words were few, but the air and voice spoke of Paradise, and in a moment I was cheerful and alert. "Thank you, love!" I said, "we will now return to the plank house;" but, spying a couple of oranges she had brought in her basket, I proposed eating them then, feeling very thirsty. The fruit was grateful to us both; and, not to lose time, I put in the seeds we obtained from it on the northeast corner of the open space, hoping one day to see the spot an orange grove. This done, we proceeded to the silk-cotton-tree to gather together our implements, and returned by the fountain to the plank house, not forgetting to take up the iguana by the way.

Early in the afternoon we went on board, but I was not idle: I nearly filled a large bag with yams and coccos for planting, which I took on shore and deposited under the plank settee. On my return to the ship, Eliza had got all the fruit upon deck, and in two or three more trips that also was transferred to the house, my dear wife carrying what she could. Standing upon a chair, she now said, "Hand me up the fruits, that I may place them along on the shelf." This was immediately done, and the pineapples, shaddocks, and musk and water melons, together

with a great store of oranges and limes, made a goodly show above our heads : generally, they were yet in very fair condition.

I employed the remainder of the evening in preparing more yams for planting. Tea was our welcome refreshment at this hour : besides, it reminded us of our English home, and we did not hesitate to use it freely, as there was a good store of it on board, as well as an abundance of sugar and coffee ; nothing being required but a little labour to possess ourselves of these agreeable delicacies. After this reviving beverage, the sun being set, we fastened up the house and retired to our cabin, to finish the day with prayer and pass the night in repose.

Thursday, 17th. We set out at daylight in the morning from the vessel, and, calling at the plank house, I accoutred myself as on the day before for my work. The goats and poultry were out as early as ourselves, the cock crowing lustily at our approach : we threw them some corn, and proceeded to the woodland plantation. On the way we were surprised and delighted by the cooing of doves, and the sweet notes of a bird like those of the nightingale. Hitherto we had not been beyond the fountain so early in the morning, and therefore had never heard such before ; but now we anticipated the pleasure we should derive from this lovely concert, should we ever be able to erect a residence near the silk-cotton-tree. Our burdens were deposited at the foot of that gigantic tree, and I went to work heartily. The air was cool and pleasant, the birds continued singing and the doves cooing all around us, and at a distance, beyond the open ground, the intervening part of which was somewhat elevated, we heard paroquets making a less melodious noise. My dear wife, now bold in enterprise, set out with Fidele to the summit of the rising ground, in hopes of seeing some of them ; and when there, she could discern several, with green plumage, busily pecking

the fruit which hung clustering from the tops of the palm-trees far beyond her. I remained at my labour without interruption for a couple of hours, during which Eliza and her dog skirted the wood opposite, and returned by the margin of the lake without accident or adventure. She described it to me as clear and smooth, and altogether beautiful: she saw several fish close to the shore, swimming to and fro, and a few waterfowl, as seagulls, cormorants, and divers. On her return we were both ready for breakfast, after which I dug between the cotton-tree and the lake, in a little dell, for another hour; and then, seeing I had ground enough prepared for my yams, put them in by eleven o'clock. Fatigue and the heat of the day then admonished me to desist.

We now sat down under the shade of our noble tree to rest. I had by this time learned from observation, that in the mornings the silk-cotton-tree plantation was thrown into shade during three or four hours after sunrise; that from eight o'clock A.M. until nearly five in the afternoon we were in shade at the plank house; and that between it and the vessel, close under the precipice, it was all shade nearly from sunrise to sunset. But the shadows were gradually shortening; and it was obvious that, as the summer advanced, these cool situations would become less and less so. The sun, by the middle of May, would be in the zenith at noon, casting no shadow all day excepting to the west or to the east, as he passed through the heavens. Since our arrival on the island he had not risen before seven o'clock, and had set between five and six in the afternoon; but he would then rise between five and six, and not set until seven, which would be a long and hot summer's day. These were my reflections then, and they proved, as the seasons rolled over us, to be nearly correct. I had therefore resolved to make the best use of the time when the places to

which I had occasion to direct my labour were shaded from the sun ; and as this was the propitious season for agricultural operations, I was the more induced to be diligent ; but my dear wife perceived I was working beyond my strength, and often pleaded with me to take more care of my health by avoiding such over-exertion. She said I had already planted enough for our future supply ; that we had a good stock of roots and fruits, and that the vessel contained flour and biscuit in abundance. I began to feel the necessity of yielding to her wishes, for I had already become thin and rather weak, so that I at last resolved to take my occupations easy, and make a pleasure rather than a toil of them. Indeed, we both had become sensible that two or three hours of rest in the middle of the day was necessary for the preservation of health in this climate ; and in this frame of mind we were quite disposed to stay where we were a while, and repose a few hours on our return to the plank house.

After this indulgence we visited the thicket and the cave, and it was on this occasion that I discovered some curious trees, about ten or twelve feet high, growing among the acacias. Large dry pods of a dark colour adhering to their branches, and not less in size than a full grown cucumber, attracted my attention : some of them had burst, and their seeds were scattered on the ground. I picked up one of them, and, having bruised it with my teeth, was surprised to perceive that it was the cacao or chocolate nut. I collected as many as I could, which might altogether amount to a quart. They were much smaller than any I had seen in Jamaica, and I concluded this must arise either from their being uncultivated, or from the situation in which they grew. I, however, hoped to find some in greater perfection in the woodland region. Our livestock were outside, so that we had the cave to ourselves. "I will go and fetch the spade," said I, "and dig up

some of the good soil which the birds have deposited, to dress the roots of our young cocoanut-trees: the sand in which they are planted is too poor for even their hardy nature." Eliza sat down, while I soon filled and carried out a couple of baskets for each tree; but, in clearing away the manure near the mouth of the cave, I dug up part of a soldier's belt with a brass plate on it. This surprised us: I rubbed the plate with some sand, and thought I made it out to be Spanish. The discovery induced me to dig for an hour or two longer, but I found nothing more. When we arrived at the plank house, I put the belt carefully away for future examination; but meanwhile we ventured various conjectures about how it might have got into the secluded place where we found it. Many of these were extravagant enough, and all, perhaps, wide from the fact; but one thing was evident, that, from its state, it must have lain there a long time—perhaps a century. We now turned our thoughts to the more valuable discovery of the chocolate nuts, which Eliza proposed trying for our breakfast the ensuing morning; and she accordingly employed herself in pounding them on a stone with the back of a hatchet, laying a piece of canvass beneath to catch the fragments.

It was now time for our evening repast, and we sat down on the wooden platform before the plank house, each on a commodious chair, and our little dog in front of us, to our comfortable tea, in peace and quietness; perhaps experiencing more real enjoyment than the world's society, with all its blandishments, could bestow! If we were deprived of its pleasures, we were exempted from its vexations also; for nine tenths of the evils of this life proceed from the conduct of the various persons with whom we are brought in contact.

We reasoned thus, and felt the truth of the proposition I have stated; still we had a sigh and a tear for those we loved and had left behind in our native

village. There was, however, no poignancy in our regrets; we still hoped some day to meet and embrace them again, through the mercy of that God whom we desired to serve in spirit and in truth. In this way we communed with each other till the time for retiring drew nigh, when, fastening up our house, and seeing our dumb companions repair to their retreat, we, too, serenely and happily bent our steps towards the brig.

Friday, 18th. Alert for our husbandry, we set off by daybreak for the silk-cotton-tree plantation, our implements, bags of yams, cocos, and seeds being my burden. My wife brought some of the pounded chocolate, which she prepared for our morning's meal while I was digging up a rich piece of ground I had discovered in the dell between the cotton-tree and the lake. Having performed this, we sat down to our breakfast, which we much enjoyed, and therefore felt some little regret that we had not been able to find any cacao-trees in our way through the woodland, though our eyes had sought them in every direction. "Edward," observed Eliza, "there seems much confusion in the name of *cocoa*: for the great nuts with the milk are called cocoanuts; and the roots here, so like a potato, which you are going to plant, are also called cocoas; and the nut from which we made this chocolate to-day, is in England called cocoa. I cannot comprehend how it has happened that so many dissimilar things should receive the same name!" "I can, perhaps, solve the difficulty, dear Eliza," replied I; "for I know the chocolate nut is not spelled cocoa, but cacao, and the root, cocco. I suppose them to be all Spanish appellations, and, if properly pronounced, they may be sufficiently distinctive." But, being more intent on my planting than discussing philological questions, "Tell me, dear," said I, "did we not bring two large sugarcanes from Jamaica? What has become of them? They are not lost, I hope, for they

would grow well where I have just been digging ; and although there is plenty of sugar on board, yet I should like to take two or three cuttings from them, and put them into this ground : they might prove useful to others, if not to ourselves." She approved of my intention, and after our talk I again went to work with my spade, while she cut the yams, and before noontide we had planted a good space with both yams and coccos : not a few pumpkin and melon seeds were likewise put in in various directions.

On our return home I stopped at the fountain to wash the basket, which had been soiled by its employment the evening before, and, as it was our only one, I was sorry to perceive it rather worn by the hard duty I had made it perform. "Never mind, dear Edward," said my wife, "I am neither a king nor a queen, but I think I shall be able to show you that I can be a basket-maker, and I will soon replace it." "Heaven's best gift!" I exclaimed; when, taking her arm in mine, we proceeded to our well-shaded house, where we reposed in the Spanish style for an hour or two during the heat of the day. At length, recollecting the sugarcanes, we roused ourselves and repaired to the vessel to search for them. After no small patience and perseverance, we at last found them in the steerage. I also took thence a piece of rope, which I unlaidd, and made into a sort of plait which sailors call gasket. With this I formed two articles, to be used something in the way of a step-ladder. When they were finished, I told my wife that by their help I thought I could get down the cocoanuts without felling the trees, and that on the morrow afternoon we would put them to the trial. She was quite delighted with the invention; for, of all things, her kindly spirit disliked destruction of any sort, and especially when it was only for some personal gratification. It was now time to retire to our marine lodgings.

Saturday, 19th. The early dawn found us on our way to our little Eden, "to dress and to keep it;" and, besides our usual articles for the purpose, we took our pineapple top, and three cuttings of sugarcane, with two joints in each, to put into the rich ground I had discovered between the cotton-tree and the lake. Before ten o'clock I had disposed of all these stocks of future progeny, and, having so far succeeded to our satisfaction, we cheerfully retraced our steps to recruit ourselves at the spring. My wife took her station on the fragment of rock on which we had first set, with our faithful little dog beside her, and tasted that pleasant water with thankfulness to the good God who had brought us into such a haven. Fidele, too, seemed pleased, as if contemplating the scene of his first exploit with the iguana; and in this agreeable fellowship of past recollections I left my two companions, trudging away myself towards the rocky point that projects into the lake, to visit my earliest beds of melon and pumpkin seeds, which had been now more than a fortnight planted. I was delighted to see them all above ground, and called to Eliza to come and partake of my joyful surprise. I cleared the earth round them with the hoe, and then took a look at the first pinetop, to which I gave a little water, and secured the tops of the split shingles which I had placed about it in the form of a cone, to preserve it from the goats. This was quite necessary, for they, together with the ducks, were now almost always around the spring.

Before noon we retired to the plank house, and were agreeably saluted there by the cackling of one of the hens, just strutting out from the thicket. "Thank you, madam," said I, "you have begun a good work: I understand you, and will soon endeavour to find the treasure you have deposited." My dear wife was much amused by my address to Dame Partlet, and joined with me in the pleasantry. I

lost no time in making the search, and, after some time, found the welcome egg a little on one side of the cave's mouth, in a convenient retreat made by the fortuitous arrangement of some small fragments of rock. There was no reason for removing thence what we must yet consider as the nest-egg, but the fear of one we had never occasion to doubt before—our useful and faithful little dog.

We knew that dogs had as keen a relish for such delicacies as the best of us, and we did not like to leave even a possible cause of temptation, and perhaps of displeasure, in the way of our dumb and un-
witting friend and companion. It was therefore resolved to bring the egg into the house, and place it in safety on the shelf, while I went to work with some shingles and a few pieces of plank to construct a house for our fowls to lay, and ultimately to hatch in. Eliza had gradually acquired courage in our new situation, and she proposed going, meanwhile, with Fidele, to the margin of the lake, to gather some of the large reeds or canes which the late storm had driven on shore, to make baskets of them. I did not oppose her, as there was no apparent danger, and she was not to be far from me. She therefore, with pike in hand, and followed, or, rather, preceded by Fidele, set off on her expedition. I had conceived the plan of my depository for the fowls, regulating its size by the length of the shingles, which was about two feet, and with these and a few pieces of plank I constructed a place on four props, about as large as one of the largest chests of tea, in about a couple of hours. But, before I had half finished it, Eliza rejoined me with nearly two dozen capital canes or large reeds, which she laid down beside me in the cave, while she drew forth some beautiful shells she had picked up, that had been cast up by the late storm, and which she now arranged on a piece of board that lay near us. They were, indeed, very perfect, and highly polished; and, as she dis-

played them before me, she delightedly expatiated on the perfections of Him whose least works are so transcendently beyond all that man can do. "There is great vanity in human beings, Edward," said she, "to suppose that all things were made merely to please and gratify them. Oh no! Think not, though man were not, the earth would want spectators—God want praise!" "My dear Eliza!" I exclaimed, laying down the piece of plank I held in my hands, and embracing her, "such were the beams of celestial light which thy much-beloved father was wont to shed around him. May that God whom thou so adorest spare thee long to comfort thy Edward, and once more to bless the eyes of thy revered parent!" We wept.

I completed my task more than an hour before sunset, but was too tired to fulfil my promise of trying my gaskets that evening at the cocoanut grove; so, after making up a nest in the hen-house with some dried grass, and fixing a piece of slanting board for the fowls to walk up to its entrance, my wife placed the egg within, and finished by strewing some corn upon the board to lead them to their new retreat. We regaled ourselves with tea and roasted plantains, and felt peculiar delight in the retrospect of the day. Before we had concluded our meal (which, by-the-way, we were in no hurry to finish, it being so pleasant in the open air upon the platform), our colony gathered round us, when some corn was thrown to the poultry, and the goats received for their share the thick rind of a watermelon we had eaten at dinner with our salted food. Poor Fidele had nothing but a bit of biscuit for his repast: wé, indeed, often wished for a little fresh provisions, if it were only for his sake. There are persons who would laugh at this feeling for the comfort and health of a dog, but I would not choose such persons for my friends. The sun set, and we all retired to our respective resting-places.

CHAPTER VII.

SUNDAY, 20th January. Although it was the Sabbath, we arose with the dawn, and enjoyed our ablutions of seawater; and, after dressing ourselves at least in clean attire, retaining our amended costume of conveniency, we left the vessel early for our residence on shore, there to breakfast, and perform our religious services in the forenoon. It was the first Sabbath we observed with prayer upon the shores of that land on which we had been cast, and we could not but be impressed with the merciful providence of God, who had preserved us from a watery grave, which we now firmly believed to have been the lot of our captain and all his crew. After reading divine service, we conversed on this awful subject, charging ourselves with great coldness of heart towards our heavenly Father, and also with something like indifference to the fate of our companions, as hitherto we had made no effort to gain the summit of the promontory, whence, by the aid of the ship's spyglass, we might possibly discover some trace of them, if it were only the melancholy wreck of their boat lying on the shore.

These reflections stimulated us to undertake the ascent of the promontory, which was very steep, seeming, in truth, an absolute precipice. We, however, presently accoutred ourselves for the expedition. I put the pistols into my belt on one side, and a hatchet on the other; slinging the spyglass over one shoulder, and our canteen over the other. In my hand I took a boarding-pike for defence, if needed, and for a walking staff to help me on my way. My dear partner tied up a couple of oranges in a handkerchief, and with her pilgrim's staff also,

and Fidele running by her side, we set forward a little before noon, stopping at the spring to fill the canteen. As soon as the low rocks and brushwood would allow, we turned round the base of the hill, and found the ascent not near as steep as we had supposed ; but the shrubs, and small trees, and spine-pointed aloes retarded my poor Eliza's progress so much, that I was obliged to pioneer at almost every step with the hatchet, and remove the lopped branches as well as I could with the end of my pike ; for the thorns and prickles of some of the plants could not be encountered with the naked hand, so that I soon found I wanted a billhook instead of a hatchet. I was glad in remembering there were plenty on board : they are made for the purpose of penetrating thickets ; cutting first, and then, by their hooked bill, laying hold of the lopped branch and pulling it aside. We contrived, however, to struggle forward, though advancing but slowly. At one time, quite fatigued, we were about to return, when we were suddenly encouraged to proceed by descrying at some little distance the opening in the back of our cave. After an hour's hard labour we gained the spot, and were surprised at being able, with very little difficulty, to climb over some projections of the rock, so as to look through the aperture, which was a somewhat long passage, directly into the cavern. I hallooed, expecting some pigeons would fly out, but we did not see any. We now determined to return back into the shaded region, and seek another way of ascent in that direction ; but, by the time we had descended the side of the acclivity, we were so heartily tired that we gladly sat down under the shade of a tree at the foot of the promontory, and partook of an orange for refreshment.

We found ourselves renovated after resting a while, and then proceeded to attempt the height on the side which forms a boundary between the wood-

land region and the silk-cotton-tree plantation. We made considerable progress up a wild ravine, beset with the Indian fig, till it brought us to a very steep and rocky ascent, on which we observed shrubs bearing leaves like those of the palm-tree, but much shorter and more erect. I could have managed to clamber up this formidable pass myself, but it was not possible for my wife. Full of courage, however, she made the attempt, and not until she had severely hurt herself by falling several times could she be persuaded to give it up. At length we agreed again to measure back our steps, which we did leisurely; and as we rested here and there, I planted in various spots on the sides of the ravine the pips of our orange. After being out above four hours, we reached the plank house much fatigued, and lay down on the wooden settee to rest our wearied limbs. We were too tired to talk much, yet I could not but express my regret at our discomfiture. "Never mind, Edward, you made a resolute beginning," was her ready reply, "and by some other route we may succeed better." She always had a word of hope for me, and such to man is the great cheerer of life. Although extremely weary, we read a chapter from St. John, a divine companion in our transatlantic Patmos; and, closing our land-house door, retired at an earlier hour than usual to our lodgings on board for the night.

Monday, 21st. In the morning, finding our limbs very stiff, we subjected ourselves to a thorough ablu- tion with seawater, and it acted like a charm, perfectly restoring us. Retiring below, we talked over our disappointment in not being able to ascend the promontory, not only that we might look around for our companions, but that we might acquire some knowledge of our exact situation, not being as yet certain whether we were on an island or on the Main. I therefore urged my affectionate wife to allow me to climb the height alone, but to this her

fears would not consent. I now felt I had no resource but to make a path, little by little, so as to admit us to ascend together at some future time ; and, a billhook being necessary to the undertaking, I opened the main hatchway, and soon found the case in which they were kept. I drew from it a couple ; and as it occurred to me that a plurality of spades and hoes would save the trouble of carrying those implements from one plantation to another, I took out pairs of them also. The Indian corn which had been deposited in the steerage being expended, I at this time got up a large bag of that article by means of the winch, which enabled me to hoist it easily out of the hold. My next object was a bag of biscuit, which I also got on deck. We were glad of this supply, as our biscuit had been out for some days, and our poultry having begun to lay, we were desirous to feed them well ; also, we were anxious to have some whole corn to put into the ground, that which we had been using having been all bruised on purpose for feeding.

We had been tantalized nearly every evening by seeing the mullet leaping almost within our reach without being able to take any. This set me to contrive a small punt (a sort of flat-bottomed boat), which I thought might be easily constructed. Eliza, however, evinced some scruples about its safety, but I soon succeeded in calming her fears. I got out some suitable plank, therefore, and boards from the hold, together with nails and other requisites from the carpenter's chest, and carried them on shore, when, everything being ready, I set heartily to work upon my punt, my dockyard being the slope of the beach, to the northward of the rocky point, and close to the water's edge. My little bark was thus constructed : five planks, each twelve feet in length and one in breadth, were laid side by side, and pieces of plank, four feet ten inches long, were nailed across them, allowing one inch clear on each

side ; and in nailing them, care was taken to leave an interval of two inches between each third and fourth crosspiece. Into these intervals, of which there were three, a crosspiece of the same dimensions was inserted edgeways, which necessarily fitted in tight, as the planks were just two inches in thickness. To the ends of these upright crosspieces the side boards were nailed, which were of elm, and, being one inch in thickness, their edges just filled up the space beyond the extreme ends of the crosspieces, and rested on the flooring ; these boards were two feet in breadth, which I considered a sufficient height for the sides of my vessel. The stern part was formed by a piece of elm board five feet long, placed nearly perpendicular to the floor of the punt, and the bow by cutting the side boards with a greater projecting slope from below upward, beneath which another five-feet cut of elm board was firmly nailed across, and secured, as was also the stern, by inside crosspieces and uprights. On the evening of the 21st my punt was all put together, but it required to be calked before it could be launched.

Thursday, 24th. I made a fruitless search in the ship for oakum, and, as a last resource, was about setting to, with my dear helpmate, to pick some large rope to pieces for oakum, when I bethought me of a place in the brig I had not yet explored, and where it might probably be. This was the fore-cuddy, a sort of storeroom for sails and other things under the fore-castle, and secured by a small hatch. I instantly repaired thither, and, getting off the hatch, went down. A welcome sight greeted my eyes ; for I found not only oakum in a large bag, but a pitch-kettle, and half a barrel of pitch. I saw also a bale of canvass, some spare sails, and a good deal of cordage, all which was a most valuable discovery. I hauled up the bag with the oakum, and took it on shore ; and then returning for a large and small

calking-iron, a mallet, and the grease-box, I was quite set up, and purposed proceeding to business immediately. My zeal, however, had run a little before the order of things, for I found the bottom must be calked first: so I had to return and get a couple of handspikes to turn over my punt; for, although it was only twelve feet long, five feet broad, and two feet high, I could not place it in a proper position by strength of arm alone; but with the handspikes, and the help of my dear wife, I soon succeeded in turning it bottom up. When this had been accomplished, I perceived that I must not only calk the bottom, but pay it with pitch, before I could proceed to work on the interior; so back I trudged for the pitch-kettle; and in getting this on shore, and a sufficient quantity of pitch, nearly the whole day was consumed, so that it was not till the following I could fairly commence.

Friday, 25th. As early as possible I set about the calking, having first made a fire, and put on the pitch-pot with its contents. For fear of setting my pitch in a blaze, I kept the embers low, and while it was preparing, laboured briskly with my large calking-iron, driving the oakum into the seams between the planks that formed the bottom. I completed this part of the business before breakfast, and even payed the seams over with a good coat of hot pitch. After partaking of this refreshing meal by the side of Eliza in the plank house, she walked down with me to the punt, and employing one of the handspikes while I lifted by hand, we soon turned our boat over again on her bottom. She was delighted with the idea of having rendered me an assistance without which, I told her, I really could not have succeeded. I continued to work all day, but my progress was comparatively slow; for I perceived I had other carpentry jobs to execute, which I had forgotten, like the man who built his house without a staircase. Thus I had to place a thwart for the rower to sit on,

and pins for the oars, besides a seat towards the stern: so I extinguished the fire under the pitch-pot, not being able to pay the seams till all these jobs were done. However, I completed the whole of the woodwork by evening entirely to my satisfaction.

Saturday, 26th. I finished the calking before breakfast, and, having made a fire again under the pitch-kettle, payed all the seams, inside and out, by two o'clock; and while the pitch was yet soft, I threw handfuls of sand in every direction within the punt, that it might mix with and adhere to the pitch, so as in a great measure to prevent its sticking to our clothes. I now went up to dinner, and after our usual repose during the heat of the day, walked my dear wife down in triumph to see my work completed. I brought with me a piece of rope for a painter to the punt, and made it fast to the bow. Then taking a plank for a lever, and raising the end of the little vessel next the water, I requested my helpmate to shove one of the handspikes under it for a roller. That done, I elevated the other end in the same manner, and placing the other handspike beneath it, with the necessary force applied to the plank lever the punt went off cheerily into the water, and great was our joy at seeing the little ship afloat. I wound the extremity of the painter securely round a fragment of rock, and thus we left our little fishing-smack, exulting in our work.

I can never forget the well-timed and agreeable feast prepared by my dear wife at the plank house to greet me on my return thither; and even the recollection of which gives me more delight than some men derive from the most elaborate pleasures. Enjoyment presupposes a certain capability, and there are many requisites to constitute that capability. Our dear Mr. Goldsmith often said, "Satan can grant possessions, but enjoyment is the gift of God, and most especially the enjoyment of retrospection."

The shaddock cut up on this occasion was as large as the best melon that grows in England; its interior was a bright salmon colour, and its flavour that of the orange, with the addition of an aromatic bitter, which rendered it highly grateful to the palate. We preserved its seeds in a little paper bag, of which Eliza had made several during the last week for such purpose.

The week being now so well finished—having, indeed, earned the promised rest by “the sweat of our brow”—we looked forward with thankfulness to the “day of rest” which the goodness of God has appointed, and without which, little as we may sometimes think of its importance, even the most diligent would become weary of the occupations of life, while a worse evil would follow: such continued labour would estrange our thoughts from that future state of spiritual existence for which we were created, and to secure which our heavenly Father has never ceased bringing forward dispensations of righteousness and mercy.

Sunday, 27th. We kept the day without any intermixture of temporal anxieties. In sweet tranquillity of mind we went through the service of the Church in the morning, and in the evening read several chapters in Isaiah and St. John, recreating ourselves at times by walking the ship's deck. When night drew on, we retired to our cabin with unusual comfort, and awoke at the dawn quite refreshed by undisturbed sleep and the rest of the previous day.

Monday, 28th. As some laundry-work was to be done this day, my wife and I, her helpmate on the occasion, repaired early to the spring, where, pulling off our boots and stockings, with our battle-axes in hand, the virtue of which we were now going to try, we fixed on two large smooth stones in the stream, and went to our task. The running water cleared the linen at every stroke; and by break-

fast-time we had prepared a considerable quantity for drying, each taking an end of the heaviest articles, and by twisting contrariwise wringing them well. "There, my dame," said I, "as your lord and husband could not have turned the punt without you, so you could not have rinsed these sheets without him. Our situation shows, therefore, how much is to be effected by mutual assistance, and that, if it is rejected or refused, many useful things must remain unaccomplished. To such a lesson, also, is the tendency of God's providence in the order of his creation." "God is good, and perfect in all his ways, my dear Edward," she replied; "but man is too often wise in his own conceit, and therefore proud, and the destroyer of his own comforts." We spread out the clean linen to dry, and then walked up to the plank house to take our usual morning repast. That over, we returned briskly to our work, and in a couple of hours more finished our task. My next business was to make a couple of sculls or small oars for the punt; and, having previously provided two pieces of lancewood, each about six feet long, I fell to work with my hatchet and adze, and contrived to give them both shape by two o'clock. The linen by this time was dry, so I bundled it all up in a tablecloth, and carried it to the plank house, where I found my Eliza, with her constant attendant Fidele, fast asleep. I would not disturb her, as she had been much fatigued with our washing operations in the morning; and as she had had only cold salt beef for some time, I thought of surprising her with something like a pepper-pot, a favourite dish in Jamaica; and, putting on a stew-pan, with a due quantity of meat and a few of our vegetables, with capsicums and other seasoning, I made what I hoped might prove a savoury mess. When it was done and placed upon the table, I waked my dear wife in my accustomed way, and led her to the repast I had provided. She praised

my pepper-pot highly ; and, much as I might be disposed to think well of my own work, I fancied every mouthful better for each word of her commendation.

We enjoyed ourselves in the cool shade for an hour after our meal, conversing on various subjects. As the evening drew to a close, "Now for some mullet, my love !" cried I, rising from my chair : my wife smiled. I knew it was doubtfully, for I could ever read her mind in her look. "Well, we will try," added I. "That is wisely said," she replied ; "but you are always ardent, dear Edward, and such feelings can only be reined in by experience." "Now, dear Eliza," I rejoined, more pettishly than I remember ever to have done before or since, "what can you know about experience—at least in catching mullet ?" I saw the tear come into her eye, and felt what I had done : I lost not a moment, therefore, in throwing myself on her neck, and kissing from her cheek the hallowed drop I had caused to fall there. The cloud passed away, and the sun of peace again smiled on us. We walked to the cave to see our poultry, and sauntered about until after sunset, feeding our stock as they came home, and amusing ourselves in various ways until the soft twilight vanished, which in this country, at any season, is very short. We then went down to the beach, where I drew up the punt, and placed a tin baking-pan on the bow, with some oakum and rotten wood in it, to which I set fire. I next took the two oars, and was about to shove off, saying, "Now for the attempt !" "Nay, dearest," cried my Eliza, "you shall not go without me, for I do hope you will be very successful." She stepped in, and sat on the seat astern. I rowed out for twenty or thirty yards, the mullet beginning to leap at the light soon after we shoved off. They came down literally in a shower, many falling into the boat, on me and on her, and one of them fairly dropped into the baking-pan, beating about till we

landed ; so that in five minutes we returned to the shore, and found nine fine fish in the punt, besides the more adventurous fellow close to our torch in the pan. " I prayed for your success, my honoured husband," said my wife, as we landed ; " I should have been very unhappy if it had fallen out otherwise, after my recent unkind behaviour to you." " No, love," I replied, " you were not unkind ; your admonitions are always conceived in kindness and in wisdom : it was I who betrayed an unbecoming peevishness ; but all is well again, and the demon of discord is disappointed in his aim." We sealed our affection with a tender embrace, and, knowing there were no thieves to purloin our fish, left them in the punt, and retired to our ship to repose.

Tuesday, 29th. As usual we arose with the day, and went to our abode on shore. My dear wife's object was to " get up our linen." She had taken out flat-irons with her for our household at Balize, and our wooden settee, with a blanket thrown over it, making a good ironing-board, she soon set to work like an experienced laundress. While she was thus employed, I brought up the fish and displayed them before her : some were much larger than others, and are called *calipeavar* in Jamaica. We were much gratified by the sight of this fresh and more wholesome food—she more especially, since it had been procured by my exertions ; yet it was evident that in this hot country we could not eat them all before some would spoil, and though but yesterday we had regretted not having any, now we lamented having so many, it being a useless waste of life. I took them, however, to the spring, and after preparing a couple for present use, replaced the rest in the basket, leaving them under the shade of the rock in the cool water at the spring head, and putting a few stones on them to prevent them from floating away. I broiled the two for our breakfast, and we relished them much : Fidele, too, partook joyfully of our re-

past—indeed, all the family, with the exception of the goats, so that there was not a fragment left.

The remainder of the day was passed by Eliza in ironing, while I employed myself near her in making some necessary carpentry additions to our wooden palace. Our dinner, like our breakfast, was fish—the excellent calipeavar boiled and eaten with lime-juice and bird-pepper. God's bounties were always like a sacrament to my Eliza, for she found in them all something more than food—indeed, a verification in her own bosom that His children “do not live by bread alone!” When we had finished our repast, “My dear Edward,” said she, gathering up the small seeds of the bird-peppers, which were red ripe, “we must plant these, and also the seeds of the capsicum: we ought not to waste anything.” “True,” I replied, “and they are of great use to the stomach in this relaxing climate.” “Indeed, it seems,” returned she, “that in every country there are found fruits and spices most appropriate—thus mustard and horseradish are the natural spices of England—so bounteous is Providence to the peculiar wants of his creatures; and I confess that here I give the preference to the capsicum and small peppers.” “We will sow some of them this very evening,” I replied, “and at the cocoanut grove. There I shall also try our gaskets, my success in fishing having put me in high hopes as to that exploit.”

While we were talking, Fidele had run off to the spring to quench his thirst, and came back frisking about in an unusual way, which we observed and were amused with for some time, till we perceived he wanted us to go with him. Eliza rose, and on my doing the same he ran before us, then came back, and then again went on, playing gently forward till we arrived at the fountain, and here we found the object of his attention—our lame goat, with two young kids at her feet. We were delighted at the sight, and almost as much so with the sagacity,

nay, something like sympathy, of our little dog. While we gazed on the newborn creatures, he fell to lapping the stream, so that we were really induced to believe that he had not even stopped to drink, after descrying the goat with her young progeny, till he had run back to bring us the tidings. We were highly gratified at this expected event having terminated so propitiously.

I now took a spade, a hatchet, a sack, and my gaskets, and Eliza being armed with her pike, we set off for the cocoanut grove, distant about a mile and a quarter. On our arrival, we were glad to see the melon and pumpkin seeds we had planted a fortnight before well above ground, but there was yet nothing appearing from the yams or coccos. "Now, my love," said I, "we will try what we can do with the gaskets." She owned afterward that she was afraid I should fall in attempting to climb the tree, but she waited patiently to see whether there was any real danger before expressing herself by more than a look of solicitude. In perfect silence she watched me take one of the gaskets, and pass one bight of it through the other round the tree, so that the depending bight made a stirrup at about three feet from the ground, and into which I put one foot, and stood steadily, having one arm round the trunk of the tree above. I then placed the other gasket in the same way, a little higher, and into the stirrup of it I set the other foot, when, loosing the lower gasket, I moved it above, making a third step, then again loosing the other and placing it uppermost, and so on. I thus ascended easily, and without danger, to the great delight of my Eliza. Having gained the top, I took my hatchet from my belt, and, desiring her to keep out of the way, I lopped off the footstalks of the cocoanuts with little difficulty, and in a few minutes detached twenty-three of them. This being done, I quickly descended, and felt quite disposed to

exalt myself for my prowess; but my too partial wife left me no occasion to do so, as she said all that self-love could most earnestly desire. We threw the cocoanuts towards the rocky ledge (our accustomed spot of refreshment here), where we sat down, and I proceeded to cleave off the husks with my hatchet. The first one I opened, and gave her the milk to drink, which she pronounced delicious, and I regaled myself with the second. Meanwhile, she employed herself in sowing the pepper seeds in various little patches of soil among the rocky fragments of the ledge, and I saw with pleasure that the spots were well chosen. Having detached the husks from twenty-one young cocoanuts, besides the two we had used, I put them into my sack, with four old ones that had fallen from the trees, still in their husks, and which were beginning to germinate; then, throwing the sack over my shoulder, we turned homeward, full of satisfaction at the success of our expedition.

The sun had set before we left the coconut grove, and the stars were out by the time we arrived at the plank house, where our simple supper was set on the table. We lingered over it, enjoying the tranquil hour, as we had nothing to dread, and well knew our way on board; and, as not a breath of wind was stirring at the time, I lighted a candle, to enable my dear wife to read a small portion of Scripture, which she desired to do. This pious exercise, however, was soon interrupted by a swarm of sandflies, which tormented us to such a degree that we were forced to decamp and retire to our ship, which we gained without any accident, and found in our cabin a night of happy and uninterrupted repose.

Wednesday, 30th. We paid our compliments early this morning to the two young strangers and their mother: we met her bleating at the mouth of the cave, where we had left her, appearing rather

distressed, as the kids could not follow her down the rocky step which formed the threshold. Notwithstanding the noise she made, the wild pigeons, unscared, were pecking along with the fowls at the corn scattered on the floor, nor did any of the party move a wing at our approach. I guided the kids down to their mother, and she immediately led them into the thicket. My dear wife stopped me here to look at her collection of eggs. She had completed a deposite of twelve, besides placing two more, freshly laid ones, in another corner; and there were eight in the nest, which we were glad to see, as it proved that more of the pullets had begun paying us this welcome tribute. Trifling as these things would be at our English home, in our solitude they were objects of the first importance.

I now proposed that we should lose no more time, but proceed immediately to our planting at the silk-cotton-tree. All my requisites were therefore got together, and Eliza had only to take up her basket with refreshments, and a small bundle of reedy canes, to try her skill in constructing another like it. The sea looked so placid, and the air was so sweetly fresh, that I expressed a wish to venture along shore in the punt. She consented with alacrity; and having stowed our separate burdens safely in its bottom, I seated her securely, our little dog, without any hesitation, leaping in after his mistress. The water was perfectly smooth, and we got to the cotton-tree beach in about the same time we should have done had we walked. Fidele was first on shore. I then handed out my wife, and, having taken out our things, drew the punt a little farther along, to where the beach becomes rather elevated and rocky. We did not go up to the great tree, but made our headquarters under a shelving rock on the beach, now in shade; and, while I went to work in the dell south of the tree, my wife commenced her basket. Having first marked out twenty-four points,

about a yard distant from each other, by placing a stone on each, I dug the ground thoroughly to the width of about a foot, and in each of these places I deposited two grains of Indian corn. I then walked down to the beach, where I found my dear wife rather perplexed with shaping her basket; but I encouraged her, as she had often encouraged me on trying occasions, and with smiling faces we sat down to a breakfast of biscuit and the milk of our cocoanuts. That over, our next task was to sow some shaddock seeds, for which we chose the ground above the silk-cotton-tree, not far from the spot where we had put in the orange pips to form a future grove. We were thus employed, when Fidele ran barking into the brushwood behind us, and in a few minutes killed an iguana. We could not see him; but, as he ceased barking, and yet remained in the bushes, I concluded he had slain his game, and endeavoured to make my way to him, but the thicket was so dense I could not: so I took my hatchet from my belt, and began to clear away the obstructing branches. His mistress, meanwhile, called him, and he came out; but he immediately ran back again, and kept watch within until I had reached the place where the iguana lay. There I found my gentleman standing crowingly, and wagging his tail. The prize itself was welcome, but it led to a discovery much more so: a small spring streamed, as from a ewer, down the rock, out of a little cavity in its side, about four feet beyond where I stood, and near the foot of a fine cabbage palm. We tasted it, and found it sweet, cool, and pleasant, and rejoiced that we had now a fountain at each of our principal places of sojourn.

Much time had been thus consumed, and it having become too hot for labour, I picked up the iguana, and leaving my spade between the spurs of the great tree, we returned to the beach. The water was perfectly smooth, so that we went back in the punt as

comfortably as we came. On landing, we walked to our old friendly fountain, where the mullet were, and brought away a couple, with the iguana, to the plank house. We thought it a pity to dress so much for dinner, but did not like to waste the fish, which was then but barely fresh; and as no animal substance will keep well twenty-four hours in this climate, it appeared to be compulsory on us to make a grand feast.

The iguana being stewed in our usual way, and the mullet roasted, we ate them, with yams for our vegetable, and wished there had been more mouths to partake of this rich repast. We gave a sigh for our poor shipmates, who, if alive, might then be dying of hunger. As the rest of the fish would not be fit for use to-morrow, I determined to bury it for a manure; and to that end I dug four holes at different distances, half way between the plank house and the lake, into which I threw the remaining mullet, with a little sand over them, and there planted the four germinating cocoanuts we had brought the evening before from the grove.

This being accomplished, I sat down to assist my dear wife in her essay at the basket; and, as we had agreed to be content with a rude fabric, there was no great disappointment in finding that even our united efforts made but a bad job of it. I now began to think a good basket-maker no despicable personage in society. However, the old basket was yet serviceable, and, besides, would be carefully preserved as a model to work by. We regaled ourselves this evening with a melon instead of tea, and enjoyed ourselves till sunset, talking over the occurrences of the day, among which our aquatic expedition gave occasion to speculations of more extended voyages. The discovery, too, of the little spring near the silk-cotton-tree led us to think of building on the rising ground beyond it; and, as the punt could convey the materials, the chance of real-

izing our scheme became somewhat more probable ; but the execution was necessarily put off *sine die*, as it is said, that is, without fixing a time, or perhaps, as it sometimes honestly means, to the end of time. Which of these occult imports was destined for us, time only could develop. We finished the day by seeing our livestock safe in their retreat, and, not choosing again to encounter the sandflies, fastened our door, and bent our course to the vessel for the night.

Thursday, 31st. Each day seemed to bring its work ; and, when not too laborious, employment is the happiest condition of man. It is told of a religious recluse, who in the early ages of Christianity betook himself to a cave in Upper Egypt, which in the times of the Pharaohs had been a depository for mummies, that he prayed morning, noon, and night, eating only the dates which grew on some neighbouring trees, and drinking the water of the Nile. At length, becoming weary of life, he prayed still more earnestly ; and one day, after this duty, falling asleep, an angel appeared to him in a dream, commanding him to arise, and cut down a neighbouring palm-tree, and make a rope of its fibres, after which, he, the angel, would appear to him again. The hermit awoke, and instantly applied himself to obey the vision. He travelled about from place to place many days before he could procure an axe, and during this journey he felt happier than he had been for many years. His prayers were now short and few, but what they wanted in length and number was more than made up in fervency. Returning with the axe, he cut down the tree, and with much labour and assiduity prepared the fibres to make the rope ; and, after continued occupation for some weeks, he completed the task. The angel that night appeared to him, as he had promised. "Dominico," said the celestial visiter, "you are now no longer weary of life, but happy. Know, then,

that man was made for labour ; and prayer also is his duty, the one as well as the other being essential to his well-being. Arise in the morning, take the cord, and with it gird up thy loins, and go forth into the world, and let it be a memorial to thee of what God expects from thee, if thou wouldst be blessed with happiness on earth."

We arose with the day, as usual, and made a voyage in the punt to the beach below the great tree, where I dug the ground, and put in twenty-five double plantings of Indian corn contiguous to the former. After finishing this we scrambled into the brushwood, and I cut several lengths of a sort of withe or bamboo to assist us in making our baskets, the reedy canes thrown on the beach by the storm having proved too brittle when much bent. This little task being completed, we returned by water to the plank house, where we were glad to rest ourselves.

After reposing an hour, Eliza spread our table with the residue of the iguana, which she warmed, adding a few coccos roasted. Meanwhile I employed myself in inspecting our stock, all which I brought round to the door with the assistance of our little dog. During dinner we also gave them food, it being my kind-hearted wife's wish to accustom them to expect something from us at our usual mealtimes ; and it was cheering to see them happy around us, the two little kids interesting her more especially. In the midst of our enjoyment she discovered that one duck was missing, and I proposed an immediate search ; but she sagely thought it probable that the truant might have made a nest somewhere, and if so, it were better not to disturb her ; I therefore let the matter rest. Having finished our dinner, Eliza, with the old basket for a pattern, made the framework of a new one ; and I, never so happy as when employed near her, began to plan a fishpot, to be made with some of the cane reeds and bamboos. It was to be constructed like two

wire mouse-traps with their broad nether extremities joined, but without any division between them. There was to be a wicker door in the middle to put in the bait and take out the captive fish, the trap-holes at the smaller extremities being made large enough for a good sized fish to enter, and the whole machine was to be about three feet and a half long. We worked steadily until sunset, talking over our discomfiture in attempting to gain the summit of the promontory, and finally resolved to undertake it again the next day, commencing at the dawn. Our work being now put aside, we packed the basket ready for the morrow's expedition, and then retired on board for the night.

Friday, 1st February. Our meditated enterprise was the awakening dream of the morning. Before the day broke we were planning our triumph over all difficulties; and perhaps our having failed in the preceding attempt added that due circumspection to our present zeal, without which nothing of importance can be accomplished. We arose with the gray of the morning. My wife now accommodated her dress to the occasion. The former essay having taught her that petticoats were incompatible with such achievements, she arrayed herself *à la Turque*: that is, added to her canvass boots a pair of trowsers, and a dimity bedgown that came half way to her knees, girding her waist with a sash composed of two or three yards of red bunting, of the narrow kind of which ships' ensigns are made. With this well-contrived garb, and a small turban of muslin and red bunting on her head, to save it from the sun, her pike in hand, and her little dog at her feet, we started on our expedition.

I brought a musket on shore, with half a dozen rounds of ball cartridge; and, calling at the plank house, took the spyglass, an axe and a billhook, some seeds, and the basket we had packed the night before with refreshments. I also swung the canteen

round my neck, and, having filled it at the spring, we embarked in the punt just at sunrise. After rounding the rocky point I rowed along shore, and, passing our place of landing below the silk-cotton-tree, kept on under the cliffs for about a quarter of a mile: the beach, unobstructed by rocks, then re-appeared, and continued for about another quarter of a mile, when it ended in high cliffs. Just where the beach terminated we concluded to go on shore and attempt the ascent, a break appearing there in the side of the mountain. We accordingly drew up the punt, secured it by the painter to a tree, and landed our things. We then set forward, accoutred as I have before described. I gave the axe to my wife to place in her sash, having the pike for her staff, and Fidele for her constant follower. We began the ascent. To make so much parade about surmounting a hill not six hundred feet high may appear ridiculous, but there were some real obstacles to overcome, and many imaginary difficulties and perils to encounter. We were in the dark as to our way, and darkness always magnifies danger.

We saw numerous paroquets among the trees, feeding on the yellow fruit of a species of palm. I would not kill any of them: we had not taken life from any creature unnecessarily since we set foot on the island, neither had a shot been fired to awaken alarm in the feathered tribe. We pursued a tolerable path for a short time with little interruption, when it brought us to a very steep acclivity overgrown with dwarf palms. We were encouraged to cut our way up this height, as the hill above it seemed to split, showing a rocky face to the north. My wife sat down under a tree near the foot of the ascent, where I deposited the musket, and went to work with the billhook to clear a narrow passage through the dwarf palms, among which there was here and there an aloe, its extended leaves pointed with strong thorny spikes. It cost me two hours'

hard labour to cleave my way through a space not exceeding thirty yards.

My kind Eliza often showed her sympathy by calling out, "Dear Edward, I wish I could help you." At length she started up, saying, "I shall be with you again presently;" and after a while returned with our basket of provisions, which had been deposited between our present station and the beach. I was not insensible to this considerate act; and, thanking her, desisted from my work, and joined her under the tree where she was spreading out our cold collation. We ate heartily, and, being satisfied, replaced what was left in the basket against our return; then proceeding in Indian file (that is, one after the other) to ascend the steep, we soon clambered to the summit. From thence I had to cut a path along its thickly-wooded brow, rather downward and slanting, into the ravine, the bottom of which was covered with fragments of rock fallen from the precipice above. At about eleven o'clock we got fairly into the ravine, with high cliffs on our left, and a steep hill covered with dwarf palms to the right. We had now only to be careful not to fall or stumble among the stones and fragments of rocks that were everywhere scattered about. We were proceeding slowly and cautiously, when Fidele ran aside and began to bark. I anticipated an iguana, and stood still, expecting to see him turn it out and kill it. A living creature, but not an iguana, certainly came forth from between the broken masses, and the dog endeavoured to seize it, but could not: he, however, soon turned it over, for it was not much larger than an iguana. I would not fire at it, although we did not know what it was. It made a noise when the dog approached it, something between a grunt and a squeak: I thought it time, however, to assist our little friend, who had commenced a second attack on the animal; so I scrambled up to the scene of contest with my bill-

hook, and found the poor nondescript rolled up like a hedgehog, but having the appearance of a tortoise. I could not strike at the creature in this passive attitude, and waiting until my dear wife made her way to us, I asked her what I should do with it. "Don't hurt it, Edward," she exclaimed, "it is a poor harmless armadillo: I have seen its picture in a book." We then agreed to tie it up in a handkerchief and take it home. I accordingly made it safe, but found it very troublesome to carry, being about twelve pounds' weight: I therefore hung the handkerchief on the branch of a tree that I snubbed off for the purpose, meaning to stop for it as we came back. We then pursued our way up the ravine.

Ascending through this cleft for about a quarter of a mile, we came out on a smooth barren surface, with a considerable height on both sides of us and before us; and in half an hour more, by a turn to the left, to our great joy we gained the highest summit of the promontory. My dear Eliza placed her arm within mine while we stood and with wonder looked around. A thousand questions that had perplexed us for weeks, were here answered in a moment. We saw an arm of the sea separating two islands, and this we had taken for a lake; but we observed that this expanse of water was land-locked on every side, so that it was, in effect, a lake as to smoothness and harbour security. We also saw the extensive reef to the eastward terminating in rocks at either end, with small islands to the northward of the place where our vessel had struck; and we discovered the promontory on which we stood to be a peninsula.

The sun was in the meridian, and we had no shade; but the seabreeze blew around us with healing on its wings, and we did not suffer from the heat. I now took the spyglass and looked around in every direction—on beach, and rock, and sea—for any sign of our shipmates or their boat; but

nothing was to be seen. I then endeavoured to discover if there were any huts, or other signs of natives, or any wild animals ; and, last of all, swept the horizon to look for other land, or to espy, perchance, some passing vessel in the distance, but could discern nothing. Being cooled a little, we now sat down, and, after resting ourselves a few minutes, took each a reviving mouthful or two of water from the canteen : we then arose, and proceeded along the smooth crest of the promontory towards its northern extremity, but kept as close as we could to its eastern side. As we advanced, we saw breakers below us and as far as the eye could reach ; also a great black rock, as if it were part of the promontory, to the northward and eastward of us. It was the same rock of which we had observed a part from the cabin windows of the brig as she lay in the creek. Farther on, we remarked a clear channel between the breakers and great rock and the promontory. After advancing nearly two miles, we arrived at the northern extremity, and there had the satisfaction of looking down upon our vessel, which we found immediately beneath us : she appeared like a boat, and our plank house on the sandy ridge like a bandbox.

To return by the way we had come would be a serious effort for Eliza, after the fatigue she already had undergone : I therefore proposed to cut a path directly to the light hole in the cave, from which there was already one sufficiently opened to descend. We debated the subject, but I found she was averse to the plan ; she could not bear the idea of leaving the armadillo suspended in the handkerchief till the next day, or the alternative of my going alone to release it. "The truth is," said she, "we had no right to make a prisoner of the poor thing for our amusement, and we are justly served in being placed in this dilemma for having done so." She certainly appeared a little vexed about the matter. We there-

fore determined to rest a little, and then return to our prisoner. So, sitting down under a dwarf palm that stood near us, and soon after stretching ourselves beneath its shade, in a short time we fell asleep.

It appeared from the position of the sun when we awoke that we must have slept at least two hours: we arose, and, applying some water from the canteen to our faces and hands, felt refreshed, and resumed our journey along the crest of the hill, keeping now on the western side of the ridge. After proceeding about half way in our pilgrimage back, we saw the silk-cotton-tree below us, and some part of the open ground contiguous to it. About an hour before sunset we began to descend the ravine, stopping now and then to put in some seeds of the shaddock, the orange, and the lime, in such places as appeared most promising. We found our poor captive as we left him, perfectly quiet in his hammock; but he must have made an effort to escape, for there was a hole in the handkerchief, and probably it was the swinging movement occasioned by the attempt that frightened him into resignation to his fate. I took him down, and my dear wife thought I had best let him go; but I said we could feed him and use him well, and if he would not pet we could then give him his liberty. "At any rate," I added, "I should like to see his head, and tail, and feet, which hitherto he has kept close within his coat of mail." It well might be called so, for his body had a covering of scale over scale—not like the continuous shell of the tortoise. I therefore took him with us, and heartily glad were we to arrive at the foot of the tree where our basket was deposited. The sun was sinking low in the horizon as we eagerly devoured the fragments of our morning repast, and poor Fidele was not the least hungry of the party. There being nothing left to gather up, we put the armadillo into the basket, and made a rapid march through the trees to the punt.

The little boat was a great accommodation to our weary limbs, and I rowed it along the shore with delight, seeing my dear wife so comfortably seated while I thus finished our fatiguing expedition. We landed a little after sunset, and literally dragged ourselves along to the plank house, where, being so very tired, we indulged ourselves with a glass of wine; after which I cut a piece of melon and put it on the floor, and, hoping the armadillo might eat some of it the next morning, I untied the handkerchief and laid him down by the side of it. The sandflies now began to bite; so, hastily fastening the door, we made our escape to our marine dormitory, where we slept soundly without rocking.

Saturday, 2d. In the morning we found ourselves very stiff from the efforts of the preceding day, and had recourse to a copious ablution with seawater, which, as on former occasions, was succeeded by a perfect renovation. My wife had experienced so much convenience from her change of costume, that, with my permission, she was disposed henceforth to dispense with the petticoats, and continue to dress *à la Turque*. I was quite agreeable to it, the new dress being sufficiently modest; and certainly more appropriate to her present situation: in truth, it was very becoming, and not a little graceful. We were early at the plank house, excited by curiosity to see the armadillo. We peeped through the lattices of the eastern window, and discovered him parading about at a slow pace, his head appearing small, his tail scaly and by no means short, and his fore feet armed with long strong claws: we perceived that he had eaten a great portion of the piece of melon, and this pleased us. "Now, love," I said, "go you and take a look at our stock, and I will palisado in a castle for Signor Armadillo, at the west end, here, of our own palace: I have plenty of shingles at hand, and will do the thing immediately." Accordingly, giving the shingles a pointed

shape at the thin end, I drove them into the sand with the hammer-head of my hatchet, enclosing an area of twelve feet by six : they were not more than a foot high, but the armadillo was no jumper, so that the rampart was sufficiently lofty.

I completed my task in a couple of hours, but before this my wife was at my elbow, followed by the goats and kids, and the gallant cock with one of his hens ; but the ducks would not be tempted from the brook. My helpmate had pleasing intelligence to communicate to me : two of the hens were sitting—one in the hatch, the other on the original nest among the fragments of rock near the cave. I thanked her for the good news, and, my little stoccado being finished, I opened the door of the plank house, when the poor armadillo, being alarmed, made the best of his way under the settee. I took him out, however, carried him forth, and laid him down within his enclosure. I then placed the bit of melon he had left beside him, though he was rolled up in his case again, head, feet, and tail being invisible. We left him in this situation, but Eliza took her station on the plank seat, to watch his movements through the lattice-work of the western window. In a few minutes she called me to her. He had unfolded himself, and was trying to get out between the shingles ; but, finding that impracticable, he fell to digging in the sand, and in less than a minute buried himself beneath it. We looked a while for his reappearance, but, as he did not choose to come out, we gave him up for the day, and sat down to a tea-breakfast, which to us was always a luxury.

After this, as the next day would be the Sabbath, and we had some arrangements to make to prevent our breaking in upon its sanctity by domestic employments, we returned on board together, to collect and set in order what might be necessary. My wife had heard me describe a pumpkin-pie as being little inferior to an apple-pie when the juice of limes

was squeezed into it. She asked me if she might venture to try her skill at one : I smiled my assent, and we took with us on shore, where our cooking preparations could be best managed, a brown baking-dish, some flour, Cork butter, and other ingredients. She set nimbly to work on our settee in place of a dresser, while I directed my care to building up a good oven of hot embers in the proper place for baking. She suddenly called out to me that she had forgot to seek, in our Bristol store-chest, for some cloves to complete the seasoning : " You can easily get at it, Edward," said she, " for I remember it was put in the steerage-passage, and it is full of all manner of spices, and such like things." " Yes, love," I replied, " I perfectly recollect where it was put, and will bring you some of its contents in a few minutes." Accordingly, I hurried away, and found it as she had mentioned : she thanked me when I put the cloves into her hand. " Edward," said she, " when these things were given to us by your kind aunt at Bristol, little did she imagine for what necessities she was providing! How gracious has the Almighty been to us to prepare us such a table in the wilderness!" I replied to her with the same feeling of wondering gratitude ; and she added, " My dear Edward, if we are to spend our lives on this island (and if it be God's will I shall be content to do so, and, perhaps, never could be happier than I am !), or if we remain so long as to make a nice dwelling for ourselves at the silk-cotton-tree plantation, I know there is plenty of crockery-ware and every other necessary for household comfort in the vessel, if they have escaped destruction from the storm." " That is true, dear Eliza," I replied, " and I hope some day to put that plan into execution."

When she had finished making the pie, I placed a spare brown dish upside down over it, having made a bed for them in the embers, and then drew more embers over the whole. She was highly pleased

with my contrivance, and, while the baking was going on, set our house to rights again. After a frugal dinner (for our pie was for the morrow) I proposed trying my fishpot, which I had just finished. Eliza rose with alacrity, and Fidele wagged his tail and barked, as if snuffing some new sport in the wind. I then proceeded to prepare the fishpot: a flat stone was selected, which I fastened by a small rope to the bottom to sink it, and another piece of good rope, about three fathoms long, was made fast to the rope attached to the stone, the other end of it being passed through the body of the fishpot, to come out above, right in the centre, so that as it was raised by the rope, it hung evenly on either side: at the place where the rope issued was a wide hatch for the fisher's hand. To this, on the present occasion, I suspended a bit of fat pork on a piece of twine, to hang loosely in the centre, directly opposite to the two holes at the extremities of the pot (which, as I before stated, were hollow cones, with the narrow ends towards each other), so that the fish might be tempted in towards the bait, but when in, could not get out. I took a shingle for a buoy to float the end of the rope, and all being ready, we proceeded to the punt, and pushed out a little beyond the extremity of the rocky point. I let down the pot in nearly three fathoms water, and took the precaution to bring a bucket to keep the fish alive in, should we take any.

It was not yet near sunset; so, on relanding, we strolled about visiting our melons, and the pumpkins we had planted between the rivulet and the southern part of the base of the rocky point. Those that were sown earliest had spread their shoots to a great distance, some of them having run upward of twenty feet from the stem; and these were all in flower—fine, large golden blossoms—while those planted ten or twelve days after them were nearly as luxuriant, but not yet in flower. The pineapple

top, too, looked well, and seemed to grow a little. It was no small pleasure to us to see this fine promise before us, and to perceive that none of them had been touched by the goats. The ducks were here, waddling along by the water, but we could count only eight, two being then missing. The goats were browsing on the opposite bank near the spring-head, and the kids were playing about like kittens. We threw them a little corn, and at the same time took some which had been bruised to the sitting hens.

As soon as the stars appeared I took my tar-rope torch to the beach, to entice the mullet in case my fishpot should fail. I rowed out and took up the pot, but, to my disappointment, there was nothing in it. However, I found a large horseshoe crab, with great spikes all over him, sticking fast to the outside. Without touching him, I let down my trap again into the sea. The mullet had been jumping before the sun went down, and as soon as I lighted the torch, which my dear wife held in her hand, they began to leap at the boat. We did not want a cargo, and I soon began to put for the shore; but, ere I reached it, five fine fish had made themselves our prisoners, and, having filled the bucket with salt water, as they fell on board I popped them into it. This was a bright thought. I placed a couple of shingles over the bucket to prevent their getting out, and, having drawn the punt on the shore, we returned, well pleased with our success, to the plank house.

After adjusting ourselves a little, we lighted a candle and sat down to enjoy some fruit, for we had now a twofold reason for not sparing our melons: most of them were beginning to spoil, and the seeds we had sown gave us an early earnest of plenty. During the day we had seen nothing of the armadillo, for he had continued under the sand; but we now threw a piece of melon into his enclosure, which we thought might in the morning tell us something

about him. The sandflies now became very troublesome, and we were vexed not a little at the prospect of being thus constantly annoyed by their nightly visits. I first proposed making a smoky fire, but we feared the combustibility of our mansion: I then thought, if my wife had no objection, of trying to smoke a cigar the next time we were annoyed by them, although I owned I was no adept at such an operation. She said that, far from objecting, she had liked the smell of cigars in Jamaica, and now supposed the people there had used them at first to keep off the moschetoes and sandflies; that she should be very glad, therefore, to have my plan tried, if it would not make me sick. This dialogue being ended, while the little wretches seemed to be taking vengeance on us beforehand for plotting their discomfiture, we hastily put out the candle, and, fastening the door, made our way to the vessel.

Sunday, 3d. Dressing ourselves in clean clothes, with more than ordinary neatness, we prepared for the quiet enjoyment of the day by laying aside all worldly care, for even in this solitude we were beset by it; and, as we walked the deck in the cool of the morning, our hearts expanded with the contemplation of the glorious scene before us, and with the recollection of all the mercies of that God who had dedicated this day to his peculiar service.

We landed to our breakfast, and after our repast, during which all our colony were rejoicing in the shade near us, I read the morning service. But it was not reading only; our hearts were in every sentence and word. After this, we strolled forth under the rocks, and visited our fish, which were moving about lively in the bucket. We then proceeded, arm in arm, along the base of the point, which was here peculiarly pleasant, from the green herbage below, and the delightful shade of the cliff; and, at the distance of about fifty yards, just where the reedy grass began to thicken, Fidele stopped, and poked

his nose in among some high tufts of the same, mingled with fragments of rock. We observed him attentively, but, as he did not bark, we did not know what to make of it. Soon we heard a hissing noise, which I instantly concluded came from a snake, and in a moment caught up the dear little dog in my arms; then peeping into the brake myself to look for the reptile, I had the agreeable surprise of perceiving one of the lost ducks sitting. Eliza was quite pleased with the discovery: it was important in itself and it verified her sagacious surmise on the subject when the first duck was missing. "Everything goes well with us, dear Edward," she said, "thanks to kind Providence!" We now proceeded a little farther, to our melon and pumpkin plantation, where their golden flowers and large green leaves already spread a gorgeous carpet over the surface of the ground. We followed the rivulet that ran behind this luxuriant little plot towards the lake, and found some of our ducks busily feeding among the reeds on its sides, which gave me an idea that they might be of the species whose roots are esculent, and I proposed to my wife trying them ourselves. "Most probably you are right in your supposition, dear Edward," she replied; "but we have abundance, and perhaps it would be most prudent not to make any doubtful experiments in eating things of the salubrity of which we can have no certainty." I applauded her caution, and agreed with her entirely as to the principle.

We returned to the plank house, and thankfully dined on our cold pumpkin pie, which, sprinkled with a little sugar and lime-juice, turned out to be excellent. The afternoon was passed in conversing on subjects of spiritual import, and in reading from the New Testament: we then took a walk to the cocoa-nut grove, and returned to our ship, where we finished the day by prayer and praises to our Almighty Protector.

Monday, 4th. We awoke long before daylight, and talked over the business of the ensuing day. I pointed out the necessity of speedily putting into the ground whatever more we intended to plant, as the moistening effects of the late rains were rapidly disappearing under the daily increasing heat of the sun. Thus impressed, we rose with the dawn, and arrived at the plank house before the goats and poultry had come out from the thicket. I carried Fidele in my arms, that, by advancing cautiously, we might get a sight of the armadillo : he was visible, but, as soon as he perceived us, he burrowed and disappeared. We then proceeded to business. I put some more corn in the bag, and screwed off the tops of four pine-apples for planting. My dear wife, too, filled our basket with many requisites, and, followed by Fidele, we marched towards the punt with every necessary accoutrement. We found the fish still all alive in the bucket, and, giving them a fresh supply of seawater, I removed it from the punt to a recess in the rocks, and then pushed out to the point. On the way I raised the fishpot, in which there was a fine grouper (a fish much esteemed in Jamaica), and, as it could not escape, I let the pot down again, and rowed off for our destination.

We landed our implements near the rocks which occupy the middle part of the plantation beach ; and here Eliza remained to go on with her wicker work, while I set to to plant some Indian corn, which I was anxious to do (although we had a large supply on board), that we might have the green cobs to roast when our plantains should be exhausted. In walking up to commence my labour, I gladly saw the melons and pumpkins flourishing luxuriantly ; but what gave me most pleasure was our sugarcanes, which had not been planted much more than a fortnight, now nearly a foot above the soil. There were six shoots, two and two, four feet distant, and in them I beheld, perhaps, the progen-

itors of a future large sugar plantation in this, as yet, unpeopled island. I worked about three hours, putting in about fifty plantings of Indian corn, two grains in each hole, besides the four pinetops. This accomplished, I joined my wife under the rocks by the beach, where she had our breakfast spread forth—cold salted beef, biscuit, and cocoanut-milk; not omitting a good slice of watermelon, a most delicious and thirst-quenching fruit in a tropical climate. The wonderful rapidity with which our plants grew excited our remarks and gratitude; for we clearly saw that, before our stock of this cooling fruit and our pumpkins could be expended, we should have an abundant supply from our plantations.

We now embarked on our return, taking up the fishpot with the grouper by the way: I did not, however, haul it on board, but kept it in the water, and left it within a few yards of the beach, throwing the buoy on the rock, so as to enable me to get it when wanted without the trouble of launching the punt. On reaching the plank house, we sat down to cool and rest ourselves. During our conversation I observed, that, as we had now finished all our principal planting, I should like to put in some of the nuts from the chocolate trees in the woodland region. Indeed, it seemed very remarkable that we had not seen any of those trees except near the mouth of the cave; and when I took that circumstance into consideration, in connexion with the military belt found there, it did not appear improbable that they had sprung from some nuts accidentally dropped by those to whom the belt had belonged, while preparing their chocolate meal; such being the chief refreshment of the Spaniards on the Main.

As my wife wished to finish her basket, now nearly done, I went on board to hoist up an empty water-cask from the hold, designing it for a very

useful purpose. I was not long in effecting my object, and without much trouble got it on shore. I now rolled it up to the plank house, and Eliza commended my foresight when I told her my intention, which was to make of it a preserve for our live fish. I cut a pretty large scuttle in the end intended for the head, and, with a proper carpenter's tool, bored half a dozen holes in the other end, which was to be the bottom, and a few also in the sides, when it was completed. I then rolled it down to the beach where the punt lay, and let it down into the water where it was about three feet deep. I then threw a few stones into the scuttle-hole, when the cask sunk, the water rising in it through the holes made in the bottom and sides. Being thus securely placed, its top was about six inches above the water's edge, and, by means of the side holes, there was a constant flux and reflux. Everything being ready, I now drew up the fishpot, and taking out the grouper, popped it into the preserve. My dear wife was quite amused at seeing it plunge, as if enjoying its new quarters. I requested her to take a walk with Fidele while I got the pot ready to set again; in truth, I intended to bait it in a way I knew she would object to, if she saw the preparation. As soon, therefore, as she was a little distance off, I took one of the live mullet out of the bucket, and leaving it on the sand till it was dead, then employed it for my bait and in a few minutes let down the pot, and was again on shore with the punt.

During the remainder of the afternoon I busied myself in weeding the plantation near the cave-spring, while Eliza was occupied with her needle. As it approached sunset she prepared tea, when I gladly joined her at the plank house. I found already there before the door our poultry and goats, to which we distributed the remains of the mullet we had left at dinner, and the rind of our melon. It

was surprising to see how greedily the ducks devoured the fish ; and we afterward thought that its occasional mixture with their ordinary food greatly augmented the number of their eggs.

The sun having set, the sandflies began their annoyance. Eliza therefore kindled a stick at the embers of our fire, and bringing it to me, I lighted a cigar, as had been before proposed, and managed pretty well for a beginner. As I smoked, she drew close to me, to be quite within its protecting influence, and, to my great satisfaction, we found the expedient successful. But I could not get through with more than half the cigar, as I began to feel it affect my head with a slight giddiness. I therefore carefully put it out, and, fastening the door, we retired to our vessel, not a little thankful that the sandflies did not incommode us there.

Tuesday, 5th. The early dawn found us on the alert, talking over the intended operations of the day. We had now only the cacaonuts to plant ; but it occurred to me, as necessity had obliged me to become a smoker, that a future provision for that might not be amiss. I had a large box of cigars, to be sure ; yet, if we should sojourn long upon the island, its contents must gradually disappear, and then in what a strait we should be, banished in the evenings from our dear plank house. The tobacco-seed, I now recollected, still remained in my sea-chest, where I had deposited them when in Virginia for my dear old father, and it was resolved to begin sowing them this very day, in our cotton-tree plantation.

But the morning's work commenced with a visit to the fishpot, in which I found three fine fish, of a species smaller than the grouper : they are called, in Jamaica, snappers. I quickly popped them into the preserve, and baited again with a mullet which lay dead in the bucket. On arriving at the plank house, not seeing the armadillo, I was disposed to dig him

out ; but my wife persuaded me to let him alone and starve him a little, by which she thought we might force him to come out for his food, and become at length familiar. Accordingly, nothing was thrown into his crib this day ; and the shy gentleman being left to fast, we took our basket with refreshments for ourselves, and, with Fidele trotting behind, hastened through the woodland region to the plantation.

Eliza took her station at the foot of the silk-cotton-tree, and I, with a zeal that sweetens labour, went to work and put in my tobacco seeds, almost all before eleven o'clock, when it became too hot for farther exertion. Just as I was finishing, my dear wife went up to the little spring in the rock-basin for some fresh, cool water, and there, Diana-like, joined the chase and killed an iguana. I heard her dog give tongue, and I hallooed "Tally ho!" at which she laughed aloud ; and, being now familiar with the sight of that ugly creature, she took it up, and brought it to me in triumph. We sat down under the deep shade of the great tree, and enjoyed our cold collation of salted meat and fruit. "Dearest Edward," said she, "this is a delightful spot : how comfortable shall we find ourselves, should you be able to erect a dwelling for us on the rising ground here, as you propose ! Besides, as there is no sand near, we might hope not to be tormented by those relentless little wretches which infest our plank house." "I trust that in the cool season of the next year, my dear Eliza," I replied, "I may be able to accomplish it ; and, meanwhile, when all our present urgent labours are completed, I will begin to bring materials to the spot." "Oh, my kind husband," she rejoined, "how happy am I with you, even in this solitude ! I would not change my lot with a queen !" After our repast I deposited the iguana in the basket, and we returned into the woodland region, where, under a protecting though not dense

shade, I commenced putting in the cacao seeds, and by two o'clock had planted about forty. I marked each spot with a bit of stick, for the purpose of fixing a little guard of stakes around them on a future day.

I was now rather tired by my labours, and gladly adjourned for our hours of repose and refreshment to the plank house. When these aids of wearied nature had sufficiently recruited me, I began to talk in a lively way, and told my dear partner that I meant to close the day's avocations with a grand fishing match, so as to stock our preserve well. She smiled, and observed that it had occurred to her "there would be some difficulty in getting the fish out of the preserve after they were in." "Not to you, sweet one," I replied: "did I not say you should be my fisher! I now intend to keep my promise; and it shall be your office, whenever you please, to take the fish out." "I shall be pleased with the task, dear Edward," she rejoined, "if you will show me how." "You shall try it in a day or two," I replied, "and I will answer for your being as expert as Izaak Walton himself." With this our dialogue ended.

At sunset we repaired to the punt. On drawing up the fishpot I found a grouper and a snapper in it, and, hauling it along under water till I came to the preserve, I took them out and popped them into it. I then baited with the entrails of the iguana, and set the pot again. That done, by means of my bucket I filled the compartment of the punt between the cross planks with seawater to the height of about three inches. My dear wife then sat down on the stern-seat with a lighted torch in her hand, and Fidele at her feet: at this time the stars were beginning to appear. I accordingly rowed out, but, before I had cleared the point, the mullet began to jump, and fell fast and thick around us. At first it was good sport, and I laughed heartily at some hard

knocks they gave me. Those which did not drop into the middle of the punt, but either fore or aft, we picked up and threw into the compartment with the water. Fidele was the first to complain of being rather roughly dealt with, for a heavy fish or two struck him in their fall, which caused him to shake his ears, and, with a yell, crouch near his mistress. He was more frightened, however, than hurt; but she, poor dear, received a too severe blow on the side of her face, and, although she said not a word, I perceived by her heightened colour that it had given her pain; so, wishing a truce to the game, I desired her to throw the torch overboard, which she did, and the shower of mullet ceased. I put back in haste: Fidele jumped on shore in an instant, and I leaped after him, handing out my dear wife most carefully, being anxious to see if she were seriously hurt, but she gayly assured me she was not, and I was satisfied. I therefore proceeded to transfer the mullet and calipeavar from the well of the punt to the preserve, and, to my no small surprise, counted more than two dozen. "This is great fishing indeed!" exclaimed Eliza; "but, my poor Fidele, it was sorry sport to thee: thou shalt have better shelter next time;" and she patted him gently while she spoke. The grateful animal jumped to her knee, and seemed made quite himself again by the cheering voice of his mistress.

I left the water in the punt as it was, and we hastened up to the plank house, taking with us some of the fire we had lighted near the rock. The sandflies, however, did not forget to favour us with their company; so I lighted a cigar, and got on with it very well this time; my dear companion keeping close to me, under the protecting influence of the smoke, the fragrance of which she said was very agreeable. We sat for an hour, enjoying ourselves in spite of the little harpies, and then retired to our place of rest.

Wednesday, 6th. On coming up to the plank house this morning, we were greeted by the sight of our other goat with two little kids at her feet: this was a pleasing surprise to us at the moment, though not unexpected. I bailed out the punt, and, lifting the fishpot, found a fine fish in it different from any we had yet taken: it was a snook. I let it down again to keep it quite fresh, and proceeded to our plantation to put in some of the American maize and a few of the pumpkin seeds I had brought from Virginia. All our plants might almost be seen to grow daily, nay, hourly; and we both exclaimed, "How wonderful is the rapidity of vegetation in this climate!"

As the day became hot, we sheltered ourselves under the silk-cotton-tree, feeling that listlessness which distinguishes even the natives of this quarter of the world, though hitherto our European energy had not left us. My dear wife now expressed a fear that I had exerted myself too much in such a climate; "for," added she, "it appears that where man should labour much, God has given him the power; and therefore we must suppose, that when that power is abridged under tropical suns, it is for wise purposes." Thus was she wont to view everything with pious depth of thought, referring all things to the providence and direction of the Almighty.

While we were talking Fidele was sleeping; and in a little time we also were covered with Sancho's cloak. It was nearly three o'clock when we awoke, and I think we were a little ashamed at the length of our siesta. We therefore got our husbandry implements hastily together, and returned by the punt to the plank house. I had there many things to arrange for future employment, and meanwhile Eliza prepared our dinner. It consisted of the snook, which we ate with lime-juice and capsicums, and found it excellent.

"Edward," said my wife, "what will you do with all the fish you have already caught? and we must feed them in the preserve." "No, my love," I replied, "were we to feed them, you could not catch them as we want them; and after they have been another day without food, we will not take any more from the sea for a time, but you shall supply us from the preserve." My making a little mystery of this achievement seemed to please her; and, betraying no pettish curiosity to know all about it before the time, she smiled, and declared her readiness to wait my orders. The sauce to the fish had reminded us of the value of our capsicums and bird-peppers, which induced us to amuse ourselves in the afternoon with planting a seed here and there about the foot of the rock beside the cave-spring, and in the shrubby ground opposite, and there Fidele discovered the other duck sitting.

When we returned for the remainder of the evening, we were agreeably surprised at seeing the armadillo crawling about in his stóccade, nor did he seem disposed to burrow even at sight of us. I brought out a muskmelon, and cut off a large piece, which I placed softly in his enclosure. He soon discovered it, and in our presence began to eat it; but we went away immediately, for fear of alarming or disconcerting him. "My dear Eliza," I said, as she seated herself on the wooden settee, "your idea was correct; we shall tame the armadillo." As we had no desire to contend with the sandflies, we retired to the ship just as the sun was setting, and there we enjoyed the cool of the evening without annoyance, until it was time to go to sleep.

Thursday, 7th. We breakfasted on board this morning, and my dear wife took occasion to observe that she must sit a little every day at her needle, as both her dress and mine needed repair. While she was busied about her own concerns, I rummaged the sailors' chests for fishhooks, and was for-

tunate enough to find some pretty large ones already fastened to lines. I selected a couple of different sizes, and cutting the lines so as to leave about four or five feet attached to each hook, put them in my pocket.

Towards midday we went on shore, she taking some needlework with her, and I a bag with the last remains of our plantains. While she was cutting out and planning her work in the plank house, I went down to the border of the woodland region, lopped off two straight sticks about six feet long, fastened the lines with the hooks to the ends of them, and left them ready baited at the rock. Returning, I said, "Now, Eliza, it is near dinner-time, and I am very hungry; go and catch a fish for us." She looked up and smiled, but seemed a little confused: "Dear Edward," she cried, "an Asiatic wife might tremble at such a command, but I have nothing to fear from my dear husband. I will go in good faith, for I know you would not mock me." "Come, then, sweetest," I said, "and it will be done." She arose cheerfully, and we ran down hand in hand to the beach. I took up one of the rods and gave it to her: "Oh, you cunning fellow," she exclaimed, "how agreeably you have teased me!" I now led her up on the rock, from whence she let down the hook into the preserve, and in an instant the rod was nearly pulled out of her hand: the strongest fish, most likely, had seized the bait. I stood by and encouraged her; and after a few minutes, with a little help, she raised her finny prize out of the cask and landed it safely on the rock, to my great delight and hers. We took it on shore, and she received many compliments from her happy husband for her dexterity. Thus we amused ourselves by turning common occurrences into causes of pleasantries.

After dinner I proposed a walk in the cool of the evening to the cocoanut grove, purely for a little excursion of pleasure. Eliza suggested our taking

the eastern beach for our path, for she wished to handsel her new basket by collecting such pretty shells as might present themselves on our way. The breeze continued fresh, and our stroll was in the shade for nearly half a mile. The shells were abundant, but not many were perfect or of a fine polish, though we contrived to gather some worth having.

On arriving at the cocoanut grove, we sat down on the trunk of the tree I had formerly felled, and rested ourselves. The gaskets were under the ledge of the rock; and, taking them out, I quickly climbed the next tree, and brought down a couple of young cocoanuts, the milk of which was very grateful to us. We then returned by the other shore, and collected some excellent cane-reeds for baskets, and arrived at the plank house a little before sunset. Tea was very acceptable after this long walk; and when we had partaken of it, we gratefully retired to our vessel to prayer and repose.

Friday, 8th. My dear wife kept closely at her needlework, while I employed myself in cutting down some small trees and brushwood, but, getting a little tired of being from me, she suddenly joined me, with her fishing-rod ready baited in her hand, and invited me to accompany her to the rock. "The day wears," said she, smiling, "and I come to my duty." "Dearest," I cried, "no duty, only thy pastime; but I will now do it, for it is rather tugging work." "Oh, no," she replied; "you allotted it to me, and I will not give up my office: so long as you replenish the preserve, I will furnish you with fish." "Well, well, be it so," said I; and instantly resolving on a bit of sport, determined to leave the matter entirely to herself; so, walking with her to the rock, she dropped the bait into the cask, when it was greedily seized by a strong fish, and the action jerked the rod out of her hand: she quickly recovered it, however, while I said, "You

shall have fair play, and the fish too." Fidele now jumped on the top of the cask, and I really thought he was going to take the line in his mouth to help her. The fish still kept its position, and my dear wife was unable to drag it forth. I now offered, therefore, to assist her. "No, no: fair play, Edward," she cried; "no fish, no dinner." She did indeed tug, and the fish tugged, and my poor Eliza was almost tired out; when, at last, by one great effort, she drew it out of the hatch on to the top of the cask where Fidele stood. The fish, however, now made a sudden bound, and carried line and rod into the open water, while Fidele, struck with terror, leaped back upon the rock; but, as we had accustomed him to go into the smooth sea and bring out pieces of stick, he now, with a little encouragement from his mistress, immediately took to the water, and, laying hold of the rod (the fish being almost spent by its struggles), kept it fast in his mouth, and after many fruitless efforts, to the great joy of my wife, placed it in her hand. She then drew out her prize with a triumph all her own. I now gave her a cheer of applause, which Fidele repeated with an extraordinary howl that made us both laugh. As the fishes in the preserve had been some days without food, I threw some in to them, and we then turned our steps homeward.

Together we prepared the calipeavar for dinner, with all the *et ceteras*. In honour of the contest, my wife set before me a bottle of our Canary wine, and she placed a rich dessert also on the table, namely, an over-ripe pine and a fine shaddock. After so sumptuous a feast, I was not disposed to sink into the woodman again that day, but sat like a nabob, enjoying the fruit and the beverage, drinking to the health of my most excellent fisherwoman. My dear Eliza was quite happy in seeing me, for once since our landing, laying aside all care, and I believe on this occasion I became a little exhilarated. We

talked over the battle of the fish, which reminded us of Waller's battle of the Bermudians with the whale, and I laughed heartily again and again—an excess of mirth neither natural nor habitual to me. After our more than usually generous repast, we extended some of its indulgences to our dependants without. We fed the armadillo from our fruit, played with the young kids, and treated their mothers with the parings of our shaddock and pineapple: neither were the poultry forgotten. At sunset we retired to our marine abode.

Saturday, 9th. I was very hot and uncomfortable all night, so that the excellence of temperance was brought practically home to me. I could not eat my breakfast in the morning, nor did I feel any disposition for exertion. My anxious wife was much distressed, laying all the blame on herself, and urged me to take a dose of physic. "Dear Eliza," said I, "your honoured father used to quote a saying of Seneca: 'When I am sick,' said the Roman, 'I must either fast or take physic, and of the two I choose the former.' Now I am of the same mind, and will abstain from eating till my stomach recovers itself." This point settled, she resignedly went to her needlework, while I lounged about like a poor sick dog, refusing all food. In the evening I drank a little tea, but was no better, and my head ached. She now became very uneasy, and insisted on my taking a mercurial pill, of which there were some in the medicine-chest: I did so, and retired at the usual hour to bed.

Sunday, 10th. I felt far from well when I arose, having scarcely slept; and some other medicine being proposed to me, I chose rather to swallow half a pint of seawater, and before twelve o'clock I was quite myself again. We then went on shore, where my dear wife read the Church service, and then prepared some coffee for me by way of dinner, which completely settled my stomach; and in the after-

noon we enjoyed a pleasant walk together in the woodland region, closing the evening by reading the Scriptures and with prayer.

Monday 11th. I arose pretty well: at breakfast, my wife told me the third hen was sitting, and that, as two more of the ducks were missing, no doubt they were employed in the same maternal office. Poor Chanticleer was stalking about, a solitary individual, before the platform: we threw him some fragments of biscuit, to which he called his hens as he picked the bits up; but, as they did not come, he left the pieces untasted, and walked away, as melancholy as any disconsolate, into the thicket. The armadillo now kept out in open daylight, stalking about his stoccado; and, being no longer under the influence of fear, stood stoutly on his legs, with his head projecting to receive any food we might throw to him, not being indisposed to meat, or biscuit, or roast yam, or anything that was put into his crib, though he liked muskmelon best.

After a frugal cold-meat dinner, while Eliza returned to her needlework, I amused myself with fitting up a place for the ducks and their expected young broods when they should come forth, in a snug recess of the rock, about twenty yards from the cave-spring; for I foresaw that it must be some time before the ducklings could march up with their dams to the thicket, and if a rendezvous were not provided near the water, they might become wild, and we should lose them. We took our tea early, and soon after retired to the vessel and to rest.

Tuesday, 12th. Early in the morning we embarked in the punt with my usual husbandry implements, a basket of provisions, and some seeds of the bird-peppers and capsicums for planting. As soon as we landed, we carried our refreshments up to the spurs of the silk-cotton-tree, and, repairing to my field of labour, set about hoeing round our growing plantings in every direction. I was fully repaid for all

my toil by seeing everything pushing forward most luxuriantly. At noon we lay down and took a nap under the tree, after which, being quite recruited, I did ample justice to the task I had begun in the morning. When our labours were finished, as my arms were more tired than my legs, we left the punt on the beach, and walked home through the woodland region, gladly observing on our way that a few of the chocolate-nuts which I had planted were up.

CHAPTER VIII.

WE retired to the vessel early to avoid the sand-flies, and rested ourselves on the quarter-deck, enjoying the refreshing coolness of the evening. "Dear Eliza," said I, "my agricultural labours are completed for the present, and you have done all the necessary needlework; what say you, then, to an excursion to-morrow to the other extremity of the isthmus? I should like to reconnoitre a little beyond the limits of our immediate residence." "If you really wish it, my honoured husband," she replied, "we will go; but we are so happy and comfortable now, that I do not like seeking any change, and we know not but we may fall into some accident by the way." "Dearest," I rejoined, "it is incumbent on us to know as much as we can of the island on which we are placed; therefore have courage, and I will go early in the morning and fetch the punt." "No," said she, "we will go, if you please." "Well, then, dear Eliza, *we* will go: it always has been *we*, and I am content that it always shall be *we*—now and forever, here and hereafter, my own best blessing!" I replied, embracing her tenderly.

Wednesday, 13th. We arose with the dawn, and, landing, walked at a good pace round by the woodland region to the punt. The birds were all on the alert, and we heard the sweet notes of one not unlike those of our own nightingale. The doves were numerous, feeding on the ground, and at the head of the dell we heard and saw paroquets among the palm-trees on the opposite side. The sun had not risen when we got to our boat, and in half an hour after his rising we had brought it back and were at the plank house. Eliza quickly put up some provisions, with several cocoanuts, in our baskets (for now she had two), and arming myself with a musket and pistols, and taking my axe and billhook, she not forgetting her pike and faithful dog, we re-embarked, and rowed along the shore towards the northern extremity of the isthmus. There we landed in its little bay, beneath the same rock on a ledge of which we had sat to rest when we formerly visited the spot on foot, and delighted ourselves with admiring the grandeur of the superb headland under which we had been placed by the kind providence of God. This little bay appeared to be nearly a mile long and half a mile broad, the land on the opposite bank being elevated more or less, and from which we were separated by the high rock close to us. Having rested here a short time, I rowed round the rock towards the opposite bank. After advancing about a cable's length, nearly touching it with the oar all the way, I found it turn off suddenly to the north, forming, with the opposite shore, a narrow creek about twenty yards in breadth and nearly two hundred in length. I rowed up this creek, the great rock standing high and rugged on my right, with a finely-wooded slope on the left. On arriving at its head, I found a small stream of fresh water running into it, near which I put the punt ashore; and here we observed a number of crayfish, nearly the size of a lobster, in the shallow

water. We disembarked at this spot, and placed ourselves, with our baskets, under the shade of a large tree, about twelve or fourteen yards to the north, on a delightful little mound, at the foot of which the streamlet ran into the creek. The lake lay wide before us to the south, and the view to the east was thrown open by a sudden termination of the great rock, which appeared perpendicular on all sides. My dear wife spread out her cold collation on this shaded spot, while I took care that the musket and all our other weapons were at hand, that we might not be surprised by—we knew not what. However, caution is generally safety; and we ate our breakfast the more comfortably for being provided with the means of defence, and those means instantly available.

After breakfast we endeavoured to penetrate into the interior by walking along the side of the streamlet, but we soon found ourselves stopped by the thick underwood; we therefore retraced our steps, planting some shaddock, orange, and lime pips here and there by the way. We again sat down under the tree where we had taken our collation, to shelter ourselves from the noonday sun. There was neither bird nor other creature stirring, save the busy seagulls pursuing shoals of small fishes in the bay, so that all things invited us to sleep as well as repose; but, being in a strange place, we were but little disposed to close our eyelids.

Towards the afternoon I caught half a dozen of the crayfish, after much trouble and perplexity. I had supposed they were of the same species with the one we had taken on the western beach of the isthmus after the storm, so that there would be nothing to do but push the end of the boarding-pike between the fangs of their great claws, and drag them out; but I soon discovered that these had no great claws, so that I was obliged to manœuvre until I could get the end of the pike under them,

which at last, after many fruitless efforts, I contrived to do, and succeeded in jerking a few of them out upon the beach: when caught, I placed them in the forward division of the punt. We now re-embarked, and, rowing out of the creek, kept along the western shore of the bay for about a quarter of a mile, when we landed on a fine gravelly slope. The ground was nearly open before us, having only a few fine trees thinly scattered over it, as in an English park. We walked leisurely up the slope for about three hundred yards, and, resting ourselves under the wide-spreading shade of one of the lofty trees, had not only a view of the whole extent of the peninsular promontory, but could see the boundless ocean between that noble headland and the corresponding high cliffs of the opposite island. This situation was most inviting for a residence in every respect—the ground open, the soil good, the exposure favourable to tropical vegetation, there being no long-continued shade as at the cotton-tree plantation; and, while we admired the view, we compared the two places in all their relations for a dwelling.

But at the termination of this beautiful spot westward, the land was steep and rocky, thickly covered with palms and a variety of other trees. While we stood surveying the rich scenery around us, Fidele, hunting about in his usual way, had got into the skirting of the forest, where he began to bark. This induced us to turn our steps towards the place, expecting to find him at his old game with an iguana; but before we had advanced many yards we heard him yelp, and saw him presently brush out of the wood, followed by what appeared to be a small pig. I quickened my pace, and when he perceived help at hand, he turned on his pursuer and kept him at bay. By this time my dear wife was at my side, with pike in hand, and almost at the same moment a drove of perhaps twenty of these pig-looking ani-

mals rushed out of the brake to the assistance of their comrade. There was no time for parley with so large a body. I had spared the single one, which was still skirmishing with Fidele; but now, without farther ceremony, I discharged the musket, loaded with ball, directly among them, and one of them fell.

During the brief moment I was observing this horde of little barbarians, the foremost combatant had with its tusk wounded Fidele, then close to his mistress; and she, at the same instant that I fired, had struck her pike with great force into the assailant's side, though he still made fight. Fidele, however, was not so badly hurt but that he now mustered strength enough to pin the little beast by the nose. On discharging my musket I saw things in the situation described, and I instantly drew my billhook from my belt, and cut the struggling animal almost in twain. The herd had run off on receiving my fire, but they were now rallying again, and seemed disposed to renew the contest. "My dear Eliza," cried I, "you must retire to our boat; you may be hurt. I will reload the musket, and soon disperse these animals." "Give me one of your pistols, Edward," said she, "and I will not fear: although a woman, I feel I have some courage when necessary. My poor Fidele!" she added, looking down at her faithful little dog bleeding. I loaded my musket, and handed her one of the pistols, feeling assured she would use it properly, if required. She knew quite well how to draw the trigger, having frequently done it to kindle our fire, and I felt that the occasion had inspired her with intrepidity to make an efficient use of the weapon. The herd meanwhile advancing on us, gathered round the one I had shot; but, as they did not seem disposed to approach nearer, not wishing to kill any of them unnecessarily, I took up the slain animal that lay close by me, and began to retreat to the boat. At this the whole troop set up

a snort, and made towards us. I was struck with terror for the safety of my wife, and desired her instantly to get behind me. I knelt, to give my fire more effect, and when the foremost of them were within ten or twelve yards, I drew the trigger, and killed or wounded no less than three. Some now fled, while others stood still; but three, more bold than their fellows, closed on us. My dear Eliza moved from behind me and gave me her pike, with which I transfixed the one nearest to me, and, to my great surprise, she fired the pistol, and shot another that had got in our rear. Poor Fidele, overpowered with terror, had skulked close by the side of his mistress until that moment, when, as if inspired by her example, he made an attack upon the third, which instantly gave him an ugly scratch with its tusk, and certainly would have killed him had I not shot the aggressor with my remaining pistol. This had been a severe and unexpected conflict; but now the field of battle was entirely deserted by the enemy, and our first care was to examine our little friend's wounds, which were about the throat and shoulder, ripping up the skin, and one of them nearly two inches long. I reloaded my piece by way of caution; but, not seeing anything like a pursuit, I again took the slain antagonist of Fidele by the leg and drew him to the boat, leaving all the rest of the killed, to the number of seven, behind. We now recognised the animal as the peccary, though neither of us had ever seen one before but as represented in the books of Natural History. It was a dark gray, rough, ugly, hoglike looking beast, about the size of a half-year-old pig. One appeared to be as much as we three victors could eat in as many days; therefore, acceptable as fresh meat might be to us, we did not choose to encumber ourselves with any more; and, indeed, we sincerely regretted the encounter that had put us in possession of the animal.

We got down to the boat without farther molesta-

tion, and then proceeded to wash our poor dog's wounds. The sides of the longest wound I bodkined with a pin, securing it by twisting a thread round it, as farriers do to stanch the vein after bleeding a horse. I then laid the patient little creature down by Eliza's side in the stern of the punt, and, pushing off from the beach, rowed over to the other side of the bay, where we landed with our baskets, to take some refreshment, and give a drink of cool water to poor Fidele. Our stay here was short : we quickly re-embarked, and I pushed along the beach homeward with all possible expedition. My kind-hearted wife had emptied the old basket, which was the largest, and with the help of my jacket, which I had pulled off, made up a comfortable bed for our wounded companion, and placed him in it. The sun was just setting as we reached our destination. My first care was to take up the basket with our poor little friend, and accompany his mistress to the plank house. I then returned to the beach, and hung up the peccary on a large wooden peg, which I drove into a crevice in the western face of the promontory, until a convenient moment for more attention to it. The crayfish I left in the punt, giving them a few buckets of seawater to reconcile them to their situation ; and then, taking up the remainder of our chattels, joined my dear wife.

Fidele had fallen asleep, by which the mind of his kind mistress was placed somewhat at ease, but much more so when I assured her the wounds were not deeper than through the skin. "Poor Fidele!" said she, "thou wilt soon be well again; but I am sorry we were obliged to destroy so many of thy assailants : I fear thou wert the aggressor, not they." Then turning to me, "Edward," said she, "they made a noble defence : neither Greeks nor Trojans ever fought more valiantly for their dead than those poor animals; and I cannot but regret that so many perished in the conflict." "But, dear Eliza," I re-

plied, "if we had not succeeded in destroying so many of them, I fear they would have destroyed every one of us before we could have reached the boat; for they made up in numbers and courage what they wanted in individual strength." "Well, then," she rejoined, "as it has so happened, it could not, perhaps, have ended better: we have much reason to be thankful to God for our preservation, even at the expense of their lives, and I will think no more of it but in that light." After this dialogue, I left her to watch her disabled little champion, while I made a fire and got tea, which was highly acceptable to us both after so trying a day; and, having finished our repast, I took up our invalid in his snug wicker bed, and carrying him to the ship, placed him near to us in the stateroom, where he passed a quiet night.

Thursday, 14th. In the morning, our first object was to bathe his wounds with some spirits, and after binding his neck with a handkerchief and giving him a little water, we took him on shore in the basket, from whence I removed him to a bed made up for him on the plank settee, on which his mistress also placed herself, with her needlework in hand. I employed myself for an hour in cleaning and reloading the firearms, which, for security, I always kept in readiness; after which I went down to the beach, and, kindling a large fire, slung the peccary over it on a pole by his feet tied together, that I might burn off all his porcupine bristles, and then scrape him clean as a Gloucestershire hog for bacon. I confess it was warm work, and during the process I wished over and over again that I had skinned the animal, as most nations, except the English and their colonists, do all they kill of the hog kind; but John Bull like I had gone to work, and like John Bull I persevered to the end. I then carried it into the cave, where I suspended it on a peg that I drove into a crevice of the rock, and returned to my dear wife to breakfast.

I did not remain long, but went to make an enclosure for the crayfish, which I did by driving some shingles into the sand in a semicircular form, just below high-water mark, and on the other side of the rock, where they could enjoy the run of fresh water, to which element they had been accustomed. During my absence, my dear Eliza had observed the armadillo through the window, roving about his enclosure in quest of food, and when I rejoined her she was feeding it with pieces of melon from her hand. I was quite pleased with this proof of its docility, and looked on with a lively satisfaction at the interest she took in her dumb dependants.

Towards noon I returned to the cave, and, cutting the peccary into quarters, put the two hinder ones into a bucket with plenty of salt, placing stones on them to press them down. I then selected some pieces to make broth for our wounded little hero; and, building up a suitable fire, with a large flat stone placed before it, I put down a fore-quarter of the peccary to roast, placing a brown dish under it, so that it had the fire in front and the hot stone behind, and I basted it occasionally with some of our Irish butter. About two o'clock I took it up, with a roasted yam and some of the broth, to the plank house, and set it on the table which my attentive helpmate had prepared for the expected dinner. When she saw it she said gently, "I wish I did not know that this was part of the peccary, dear Edward; I really do not like to eat it; yet I owe it to you, for your fatigue and trouble about it, to banish every other feeling than the desire of pleasing you, and will therefore dine on it with you, and I hope cheerfully." I thanked her, and she smilingly received a plate of the broth from my hand and gave it to Fidele, who seemed mightily to approve of it. The roast looked very well, but did not taste quite as well as it looked; however, by the aid of a little limejuice and capsicum, we contrived to make a

dinner. Eliza, with her usual resigned spirit, did not complain of its being unpleasant: I did, and proposed the limejuice and capsicum; but, having conquered her moral objection to it, the physical repugnance was to her too insignificant for a murmur.

About an hour after our repast, as my dear wife had been confined all day with our wounded friend, I volunteered to remain with him while she should take a little walk, for exercise, to the thicket and the spring. She readily yielded to my wish, carrying with her some bruised corn for the three hatching hens and the four sitting ducks, the two lately missed having been discovered near the spring-head, in snug nests among the rocks.

She did not tarry long, and, returning with a quick step, told me that after feeding the poultry, she had taken a peep into the cave, where she found fluttering on the floor two young full-fledged pigeons, which had probably fallen in attempting to fly out through the aperture in the top. She held them tenderly in her hands, and showed them to me with a pitying kind of pleasure. "Now, dear Edward," said she, "we can keep these, and tame them without hurting them." "Certainly," I replied; "to keep them we have only to cut one of their wings, and place them in the cave, where the old ones will continue to feed them." "Oh, no!" she answered, "I wish to tame them near ourselves; but if the old ones should come to them when with us, we would treat them well, and by so doing might perhaps tame them also." "Well, dearest," I rejoined, "we will do even as you propose:" so I took her scissors, and clipped the long feathers of one wing of each pigeon, and, for the present, deposited her new pets in the old basket vacated by Fidele. Towards evening I took the young birds in the basket to the cave, where I scattered plenty of bruised corn, and then returning to the plank house with Fidele in my arms, we hastened on board before the sand-flies began to buzz.

Friday, 15th. Our little dog was on foot as soon as we arose, and seemed quite himself again; but, although he appeared ready to run before us as we went on shore, I thought it best to carry him. On landing, Eliza visited her pigeons in the cave, while I remained at the plank house. When she returned, she told me that, as she went in, she found a great many pigeons pecking on the floor, and one of them in the basket feeding the young ones. She was quite delighted at the sight, and I with her description of it. We now concluded to place the basket in the avenue gradually at wider and wider distances from the mouth of the cave, with corn scattered around it, thus luring the old ones to follow it, until they should at length feed at our door. I now walked down to the rocks to hoe a little round the plants, and on my return found that my dear wife had boiled the kettle, and roasted the last of our plantains for breakfast, of which wholesome vegetable we this morning took our leave with some regret, it being an excellent substitute for bread.

During the forenoon I employed myself on board, in getting several necessary articles from the hold, where the ship's stores of salted provisions, flour, &c., were kept. Returning with these, I next went to the fish preserve, where I baited a hook, and soon drew up a mullet for our dinner. Fidele, his jaws being no longer stiff from his wound, now greedily partook of our fare.

In the afternoon we went in the punt to our plantation. The voyage was pleasant, and we found everything flourishing. The Indian corn was several inches above ground, high enough for the hoe, and the sugarcanes had grown another foot, so that I found plenty of employment till the evening. My dear wife, with Fidele at her feet, stood near me while at work, and we both surveyed with pleasure and thankfulness the promising fruits of my labour.

We returned with improved spirits from our ex-

pedition, and, as the evening was delightfully cool, were induced to remain sitting on the platform until the stars appeared, though with them the sandflies came also : however, not being disposed to be driven away, I had recourse to a cigar, while my dear wife nestled close to me, and we enjoyed not a little the serenity around us. The cigar finished, we started for the ship, to our repose.

Saturday, 16th. I pumped the ship out this morning, and, while I was thus employed, my wife rummaged the captain's chest, and took out a new jacket and some striped trowsers ; my broad-skirted coats and short tight smallclothes not being at all convenient for my present occupations. We disembarked to breakfast, and I went to the cave to look at our corned meat, which I found perfectly sweet ; but the fresh quarter was quite spoiled the day before, and I had thrown it to the crayfish. It occurred to me to examine the place where I had driven in the peg to hang the peccary on, as I recollected it sounded hollow while I was hammering ; and, on farther inspection, I was persuaded it was so. Rejoining my wife, I told her my suspicion, and we determined, after breakfast, to satisfy ourselves respecting it. Accordingly, we repaired together to the cave, and I struck with my hammer against various places ; but, though there evidently was a difference of sound near some of them, she thought it no doubt arose from natural fissures in the rock, and so we returned as wise as we went. Next day being the Sabbath, we employed ourselves in dressing some provisions, and in doing whatever else was requisite to keep it holy, that we might give to the Creator of the whole earth a seventh of that time which is altogether his, and which he has appointed as a type of the rest prepared in everlasting mansions for his people.

Sunday, 17th. We arose with the sun, and performed our usual ablutions. It has been well said

"that cleanliness is next to godliness:" it is, in truth, the symbol of inward purity. The sea-water we always found highly refreshing and invigorating, and nothing but the dread of the sharks prevented us from bathing daily on the beach. But I now hoped soon to find leisure to erect a bath, so that we might enjoy the pure and ample wave, and be placed in safety from those terrible monsters of the deep. We dressed ourselves neatly—she in the work of her hands, which during the last few days she had been adapting to present convenience, and I in the captain's jacket and trowsers, enjoying ourselves a while on the quarter-deck, until it was time to go on shore to breakfast. We first visited the young pigeons in the basket, and brought them to the plank house, where we took them out and strewed some corn on the ground. We then watched earnestly to see what would be the result; and, to my Eliza's great delight, while we were at our repast the old birds came and fed them. Our poor solitary cock, too, came up among them, apparently glad to find company.

After breakfast I read the morning service, and my dear wife the lessons of the day, concluding with one of Archbishop Tillotson's excellent sermons: "If ye love me," said our blessed Saviour, "keep my commandments." We then took some food to the rest of our dumb friends, and Eliza fed her armadillo. The so recently shy creature now went round the inside of his enclosure from place to place, following her as she changed her position with the slices of melon in her hand. We dined on what had been provided yesterday, giving thanks, with more than our daily fervency, for the bounties of that God who had been so merciful to us. In the afternoon we read several chapters in Isaiah, and a part of the Gospel of St. John, and then took a walk into the woodland region, Fidele sedately following the footsteps of his mistress. It was happiness un-

utterable thus to walk arm in arm with the one of all earthly beings the most dear to me—not bone of my bone, but soul of my soul ; having one mind, one spirit, one faith, one hope ; a blessed communion, in short, with each other forever in Christ, who is the power and wisdom of God, by whom all things were created, and in whom alone mankind can be saved from the effects of sin unto the resurrection of eternal life.

Monday, 18th. We arose with the day, and went in the punt to visit the cocoanut grove, where our plants, from their rapid growth, required constant attention. The melons and pumpkins had attained the size of lemons, and the yams and coccos were well up, but the stems of the former appeared weak. While I employed myself with my husbandry, my dear wife visited her capsicums among the earthy places of the rocky ledge, and found them also well forward. Having finished my hoeing, I took the gaskets, and, ascending one of the trees, cut off about a dozen young cocoanuts, which I carried down to the punt without disencumbering them of their husks, the distance being inconsiderable.

After my morning's labour I was disposed to rest a while at the plank house, lingering over our breakfast, and our conversation again turned upon the hollow-sounding places in the cave. The idea still possessed me that some of these places must be deeper than mere fissures in the rock—perhaps an inner cavern ; and I therefore proposed taking a heavy hatchet-hammer, to sound the rock all along its side, to test more thoroughly the extent of the hollows. My wife was pleased with the notion of discovering another recess in our cave, and I accordingly took my heaviest hatchet, and struck the sides of the place in different parts as before : I was quickly satisfied that the sound from near the crevice where I had hung up the peccary, and for several yards beyond, was very different from that produced

by striking against the other parts of the cave. We now brought in a candle, for this place was the darkest, and, therefore, the coolest in the cave, on which account I had selected it for our larder. Aided by the light, to our amazement we could distinctly perceive an appearance of artificially inserted stones. We now reflected on the circumstance of finding the military belt, and on the chocolate-trees at the cavern's mouth, and thought this built-up partition might be connected with those things.

I lost no time in going on board for a crowbar, which I had seen in the fore-cuddy, and, bringing it, commenced dislodging the stones. In a short time I succeeded in opening a hole large enough to admit my body, and, thrusting in my head and shoulders, perceived a kind of chamber, dimly lighted from a narrow fissure above, but not sufficiently to show distinctly anything within. I knew that the air admitted by the opening made below would immediately expel any foul vapour that might exist within through the aperture at the top; and after resting a moment to explain this to Eliza, I wormed myself into the recess, and took the candle from her hand. For some time I could not discover anything worthy of notice; but, on moving forward about three yards, I saw a heap of small canvass bags ranged side by side, and behind them a long wooden box. Without stopping to examine them, I stepped back to the hole where I had entered, and desired my wife to join me, telling her what I had discovered. By my assistance she soon got through, when, opening one of the bags, there was suddenly disclosed some sparkling metal. "This is treasure!" cried I. "God preserve us!" she instantly exclaimed. "From what, dearest?" I replied, shaking out several large pieces of coin. "They are full of dollars," she rejoined; "and of what use are they to us?" "Well, love," I replied, "they can do us no harm; we can leave them where we found them, if we choose."

"Just so," she answered. "However," said I, "we will examine the box." The lid was nailed down, so that it could not be opened without a chisel; we therefore crept out of the recess to bring one from the carpenter's chest, and returned to the plank house. I held in my hand some pieces of the money that had fallen out of the bag, and which by candle-light had appeared white, whence we concluded they were dollars; but we now discovered that they were doubloons. I stated the vast difference in their value to Eliza. "Well, Edward," said she, "it is all the same to us, dollars; or doubloons, or our own English pennies; we cannot send them to market here. Your health, my honoured husband, is our wealth, and God's blessing our exhaustless mine! So I care nothing about these, or only this, that I fear their discovery will be a source of great uneasiness, and perhaps of misery, to us." "Very well, dearest," I replied; "if there be any more of it in the other bags, with your counsel and God for my guide, I hope I shall not make a bad use of it, should I ever have an opportunity to employ it." "I hope, nay, I believe you would not, dear Edward," she rejoined; "but riches are a snare." "Why, sweet Eliza," I answered, gravely, "bags of gold can be no riches to me where we are: they might as well be full of sand."

Here the dialogue ended; and in little haste about going for the chisel, I set about preparing dinner, in which my dear wife, cheerful as usual, assisted me. We dined on the last corned quarter of the peccary, which was very good, the salt having drawn out the rankness the meat has in its fresh state. "Now, love," said I, "let us go and examine the box." She relighted the candle, and taking a chisel and mallet with me, we proceeded to the cave, and, entering the recess, I opened the box. It was full of all sorts of gold and silver articles, as representations of the crucifixion, the Virgin and child in highly-wrought sil-

ver shrines, gold hilts for swords, large earrings of gold, ingots of gold, gold and silver tissue, silver lavers, and other costly things. Eliza admired all these beautiful pieces of workmanship very much, making various appropriate remarks on the different articles; and when we had examined them all, she said gently, "Dear Edward, let us shut the box up, and the place in which we found it also: these things do not belong to us." "Oh, very well," I replied; "as you please: I don't care a rush about them." Without another word we stepped out of the recess, and I put back the loose stones in their places.

Returning to the plank house, after a few moments' musing I said, "Dear Eliza, we will let this matter rest for the present, and discuss it at our leisure: I trust, whatever we may conclude to do, it will have a blessing, and not a curse." "Do not let it perplex you, my honoured husband," she replied; "we will pray God to direct you."

This affair, however, was of too much importance to be left unsettled. Turning the doubloons over and over in my hand, I found on them the name of Carolus II., and, although looking as if just from the mint, they bore the date of 1670. "Eliza," said I, "when we look at the date of this coin, and consider the condition in which we found the belt, the probability is that this treasure has been here at least fifty or sixty years, and that there are no persons now living to whom it legally belongs. Besides, most likely the persons who placed it where it is were bucaniers, who took it by violence from some Spanish vessel, and killed the owners at the same time. Hence the conclusion is that it is not the property of any one—at least of any one that could, with the utmost diligence, be discovered. Possession, therefore, is the only right which, under existing circumstances, can be set up; it is consequently a duty I owe to myself, to you, and to all connected with us, to secure this treasure, and convey it to England if

ever an opportunity should offer ; and, with your consent and approbation, my beloved wife, I shall act accordingly." She did not answer me for some time, but at last she said, "If those to whom it rightfully belongs cannot have it, I certainly see no just reason why you should not do with it as you propose." "Well, dear," I replied, "it is on that principle I shall act, and lose no time in securing the fortune that has fallen so wonderfully into our hands." The question between us was now set at rest, and a great weight taken off my mind ; for my conscientious friend as well as obedient wife would never have assented to any step which she did not believe to be founded on moral propriety.

It was but a few hours since I had discovered this unlooked-for hoard, and with all my efforts I could not settle down to my work as before. I lingered at the plank house, talking on subjects far away from our little island ; and I asked my dear companion to set before us some wine, which she did, and I sat and discoursed till teatime. She often smiled at my remarks, but would not disturb my humour, and that visionary hour or two passed off very agreeably. We fed our animals, and retired early to the vessel.

Tuesday, 19th. My sleep during the night was disturbed by strange dreams, too incoherent to be related, but all about the treasure in the cave. On waking, I mentioned them to my dear wife, though I really felt ashamed that the matter had so engrossed my mind. After discussing the subject for an hour, she finally said, "Well, Edward, whatever you wish to do, I will join you in most cheerfully ;" and she said this with great emphasis, as she always did when she had made up her mind thus to pledge herself. I received her assurance affectionately, and we left the vessel for the shore.

After breakfast I proposed that we should examine the bags, with their contents ; and, accordingly,

entering the cave, I removed the loose stones from the breach in the wall, and we soon found ourselves again in the recess. There were forty bags, each not larger than the top of a stocking; but, on counting out the doubloons from one, the result was five hundred; and, opening some others, I found the number to be the same. The bags were nearly rotten, though they lay in a bed of dry sand. "We have here," said I, "my dear Eliza, additional proof of the great length of time this money has been hidden." "Well," she replied, "and what are we to do with it?" "You must make some new bags," was my answer, "and I will make boxes to pack them in; and then we will leave them here, ready for any opportunity that may occur for their removal and our own. In the course of time, some vessel may providentially hover near us, and afford us the means of returning to our native home, to bless with our riches those whom we fondly love." "Ah! dear Edward," she exclaimed, "it may indeed please God to make us the instruments of comfort to your family and mine, and with these riches to be a blessing to the poor;" and, saying this, she embraced me tenderly.

There sometimes is a presentiment that cannot be checked, and such was that which I now felt respecting these bags of gold: my mind seemed assured of the possibility of certain events; and, contemplating them (though afar off) as if they really existed, I saw opportunities in a thousand shapes of quitting the island with our treasure, and desired to be ready for the favourable moment. I hastened, therefore, to get up some new canvass from the fore-cuddy of the brig, and cut it into forty pieces for as many new bags. "Now, my Eliza," said I, "you must sew up these as strongly as you can, and I will make boxes to pack them in, so that we may be prepared for any emergency." Here was at least a fortnight's employment for us; and, du-

ring the remainder of the week, we kept busily at work.

On Sunday, the 24th, we rested from our labours, though I confess we did not feel as serenely devout as had been usual with us on this day. Still we read the Church service, and engaged in other spiritual exercises; but our thoughts too often reverted to the strange discovery of the preceding week. It was nevertheless the Sabbath, and we found it so to our minds, praying fervently to God for direction and support, that He would be our counsellor and comforter, and not permit us to forsake Him and our life of holy hope for any earthly considerations.

Coming on shore, near the thicket avenue we had the pleasant sight of one of our fowls with a brood of twelve chickens, and recollecting that another had begun to sit on the same day, we visited her just in time to assist her little progeny to step down to the wild herbage: of these latter there were thirteen; and I can truly say we were more delighted at seeing this addition to our family than in finding all our treasure; for the one was unalloyed, the other encompassed with care and misgivings. My dear wife fed the hens, before we took our own breakfast, with plenty of bruised corn, which the little strangers likewise endeavoured to eat, while the two young pigeons walked about, pecking familiarly with the group, and even some of the old birds flew down and fed with them. The armadillo was now grown so tame that he might have been let out; but, for fear of alarming the young chicks, with their dams, we thought it best to keep him a little longer in his enclosure.

After dinner we took a walk through the woodland region to the plantation, where we felt renewed happiness in contemplating the progress our plants had made. Our dear little dog, too, now quite well, seemed to participate in our pleasure at being thus

emancipated from the long captivity imposed by our bag and coffer making, and, could he have spoken, would doubtless have pronounced a hearty malediction on all bucaniers and their doubloons. We returned to our house an hour before the sun set, and, having read some chapters in the Bible, took our tea and retired to rest.

Monday, 25th. On rising this morning we both expressed a wish that we had never found the treasure, for it had discomposed our minds, and sadly degraded the customary tenour of our employments. However, having taken our resolution not absolutely to throw it away by sheer neglect, we persevered in our work, and by the following Saturday morning all the bags and boxes were finished. We then counted the contents of the old bags as they were put into the new ones, and found each to contain exactly five hundred doubloons. Each box was made to hold three bags, which I packed closely with sand, there being thirteen boxes in all; and, as there was one bag over, I removed it to the plank house. We were heartily glad when the business was completed; so sick, indeed, were we of it, that I built up the wall again without even looking a second time into the great chest that contained so much treasure in various shapes.

In the course of the week two of the ducks had brought out their broods (one of eight, the other of ten), and, busy as we had been, we did not omit carefully to house them every evening in a place I had built for them near the spring.

Sunday, March 3d. We arose this morning and blessed God, as if delivered from some great calamity. Our hearts were again light, and, after dressing for the day, we enjoyed ourselves on deck, arm in arm, with new delight. The sun was up, yet the morning was cool, and we looked once more abroad, alive to all the beauties of nature. Surely there must be something even in the touch of gold de-

moralizing to man! Such, at least, was my reflection. This Sabbath was passed in great comfort of mind and in the due exercises of religion.

Monday, 4th. We congratulated each other, on leaving our cabin this morning, that we had done with counting and packing doubloons: nevertheless, I smilingly remarked that I had large possessions both in land and money, without a title to either! "But," said my dear wife, with an answering smile, "if there be no one to show a better title, possession will give you the right. However," added she, more seriously, "we will leave the issue of our present extraordinary situation in the hands of Him who placed us in it." "Just so, my love," I replied; "and here let us leave the subject."

But the subject was not so easily got rid of; it haunted me in spite of myself. "I should like, dear Eliza," said I, a little while afterward, "to make another excursion to the summit of our promontory: we ought not to neglect the chance of discovering vessels in the offing; and, besides, I wish to make some farther observations with the spyglass, as the adventure with the peccaries seems to have frightened you and Fidele from going beyond our own immediate domain." To this proposition she offered no objection, and her little friend being now quite recovered, we could again march forth in due order.

Equipping ourselves, therefore, with pike and bill-hook, pistols and musket, and the ship's glass, and my dear wife having put some refreshments in her basket, we stepped into the punt, and I rowed round to the farther extremity of the cotton-tree plantation. We landed, and proceeded through the wood to the foot of the hill; and, having deposited our basket under the tree where I had formerly cleared a pathway to the ravine, we began to clamber up the ascent, and in about an hour gained the summit. I here looked carefully around, sweeping the hori-

zon with my glass wherever the land did not intervene, but no sail was to be seen. I then directed my eye to all the shores of the islands within sight, but nothing presented itself worthy of attention excepting some large black birds (probably carrion vultures) hovering about the place where the peccaries had been killed. We returned, therefore, to the tree where our provisions had been left, and, seating ourselves under its deep shade, we greatly enjoyed our collation, to which a cocoanut-shell of cool wine and water proved an excellent appendage.

After breakfast we proceeded in the punt to the northern part of the plantation, and, landing there, I occupied myself for an hour in weeding the ground around our various plants, which were all highly flourishing. At noon we retired to our favourite cotton-tree, where we gave ourselves up to sleep: we dined, also, beneath its friendly shade; after which I cut some sticks from the adjoining thicket to support the slender stems of the yams, which I thought required it, from their seeming weakness. We returned in the punt in the cool of the evening, and stepped on shore a little before sunset.

I felt we had not enjoyed the day's excursion as we were wont: the beauties of the place were less remarked upon than formerly, and nothing was said of its eligibility for our permanent residence. It was evident that the newly-discovered gold had instilled a subtle poison into my mind at least, and that it continued its secret operation in spite of all my sage conclusions and excellent resolves. We were, however, much pleased at seeing our two broods of young ducks waddling up to their home as we landed; and, while my dear wife stood by them, I ran up to the plank house, and brought some bruised corn, which I mixed with water for them in a hollow stone close by the door of their habitation. We walked thence with the goats and their kids, and were met at our door by the gallant cock, with his

numerous progeny. Our next care was to feed them; and we cut up a pumpkin for the goats, not forgetting a melon for the armadillo: all this afforded us a pure gratification, very different from the feverish hopes excited in us while counting and packing the gold. After regaling ourselves with a pineapple, we retired to our marine abode to pray and rest.

Tuesday, 5th. On rising in the morning, we talked over making some change in our accommodations. The increasing heat of the weather had made it rather unpleasant in the stateroom at night, so that I employed myself after breakfast in slinging a cot in the great cabin, which was more airy for a dormitory; and in the end it proved to be not only for our comfort, but for our health. While I was thus engaged, my dear wife made some johnny-cakes (a West Indian sort of bread) and a pumpkin pie. I then went down to the place where we kept the crayfish, and was bringing one home with me, when I observed several young pumpkins about the size of English penny rolls. I cut off half a dozen and put them in my basket; but Eliza, on seeing them, expressed a fear that I had gathered them prematurely. "Oh no!" I replied, "they eat them in America in this state; and when boiled and mashed, with a little butter and pepper, they are as good as turnips." This pleased her much, for she had often wished for some greener vegetables to eat with our fish or meat than the yam or coccos. The crayfish was put over the fire, and also the young pumpkins; and, reserving the pie for the morrow, we made an excellent dinner. In the evening I pursued some of our usual daily occupations, and when the stars appeared we retired composed to our place of rest, anticipating a cool and comfortable night's sleep, in which we were not disappointed.

Wednesday, 6th. We arose unusually refreshed, feeling as if we had slept in another climate, and quite delighted with our swinging bed. Coming on

shore, we visited our third hen, having calculated that her brood should be out about that time, and we found her surrounded by a numerous progeny, no less than fourteen. By this accession we had altogether thirty-nine chickens—a most welcome stock for our future subsistence. After breakfast, I suggested to my dear wife, as my husbandry was completed for the season, that I should begin my preparations for constructing our proposed house on the open glade near the cotton-tree plantation; for, although we might hope it would please God to afford us an opportunity at some period to remove from the island to our native home, yet it would be to our happiness, meanwhile, to wait patiently on Him for his own time, and think only on such matters as immediately concerned us. These were her own sentiments, and she was delighted in hearing me speak as I had done.

After this conversation, while I was gone to examine the fishpot, my dear Eliza recollected a large and small coffee-mill she had seen in the captain's cabin, and she brought them on shore. "Edward," said she, "this large one will make a nice cornmill for the poultry, and I will roast some coffee, and grind it in the other; it will save our tea, and be an agreeable change." I was much pleased at the sight of these mills, which had escaped my observation, and determined to fix them both up for service. We dined sumptuously on a fine fish which I had found in the fishpot, and, being fresh from the sea, we relished it greatly. In the evening I fastened the mills to the inner side of our palace, and, having roasted some coffee in the frying-pan, ground it, and Eliza soon presented me with a cup of the refreshing beverage.

Thursday, 7th. We arose with the dawn, and while I was beginning my preparations in the hold, to get up planks and boards, and some long square timber purposely destined for house-building, my

active helpmate went on shore to attend to the poultry. As she was feeding them, she was delighted with seeing the other two missing ducks, with their broods, near the spring-head: one had brought out nine, and the other eight; so that in the four broods we mustered thirty-seven young ones.

After breakfast I set to grinding corn, and found the mill do so well, that we looked to it as a fortunate resource for ourselves in case our flour should spoil, and we be obliged to eat Indian corn thus prepared in its stead. In the afternoon we walked over to the cocoanut grove, where I employed myself in hoeing for an hour, and saw with satisfaction everything in a flourishing condition. We finished our evening, as usual, on the platform of the plank house, and retired early to our vessel.

I will now pass over the remainder of the month with simply stating that I worked for four hours in the morning of each week-day in getting together the materials for building our new residence, and that I also found time to make, with planks and fragments of the rock, under the larboard bow of the brig, a secure place, covered at the top, for a bathing house, which proved a source of great comfort and delight to us: nor did I neglect to dress the ground at one or other of the plantations every evening. My dear wife the while attended to the stock and other domestic matters—always happy when the Sunday came round, it being ever to us truly a Sabbath day.

Monday, April 8th. During the preceding month I had conveyed all the materials to the spot where we intended to build our new house. But many of the melons and pumpkins now required gathering; the corn, also, was ripening apace, and the yams and coccos would soon be fit to dig; so that labour of a different kind called on me to suspend, for the present, any farther operations. I, however, set about erecting a temporary shed near the great tree, to re-

ceive the various products of our grounds, as I might be able to get them in. This operation brought round another week ; and on the Sabbath we blessed and praised God, and I rested from my labour.

CHAPTER IX.

MONDAY, 15th April. As my dear wife and I were enjoying our breakfast under the ample shade of our cottonwood-tree, we were struck dumb by the sudden appearance of a large canoe between us and the opposite island. To arms was the first impulse : I put my pistols, which were lying near me, into my belt, and, after looking anxiously at each other for a few moments, I said, "Fear nothing, my beloved wife! They may be nothing more than a few harmless Indians, driven hither by some accident : I will beckon them to land." "Then," she exclaimed, "may our God be with us, as we mean them kindly." I now took her pike, and tied a white napkin that lay in the basket to it for a flag, and with it we ran to the highest part of the open ground, where we held it up, waving it to attract their attention. In a few minutes they discovered us, for they were scarcely more than half a mile from the shore. They immediately turned the head of their canoe towards us, and soon began to hail us ; but we did not understand them, and could only answer, therefore, by continuing to wave our signal. My dear wife, however, bethought herself to run back to the cotton-tree, whence she brought a fine melon, and held it up in her hand, while I kept flourishing my token of invitation. They were now lying on their paddles, about a cable's length off, apparently in consultation. At sight of the melon they spoke to

us again, and we heard the word *amigos*, or something very like it. The Latin I had learned at school made me catch at it: *amicus!* thought I; that will do; and I hallooed out "*amigos!*" as loudly as I could, imitating their pronunciation of the word, and again waving the flag. On this they began to paddle in earnest towards us; but we kept our commanding position, walking along the high ground as we approached the water until we should be able to see them more distinctly. As they drew near the shore, we discovered two men, two women, and a girl in the canoe, all negroes. I now perceived we had nothing to fear, so I made signs to the men to row a little to the northward, that they might land clear of the rocks. Meanwhile, with our dear little dog at our side, we advanced to meet them, and descended to the beach just as the canoe touched the shore. The people did not jump out instantly, but stood or sat, surveying us attentively. At length the elder of the men stepped out, and, stooping before me, embraced my knees. I raised him up, while my wife, with the look of an angel, gave him the melon; and I, to show him I had no misgivings, took a clasp-knife from my pocket, and, putting it into his hand unopened, made signs to him to cut the fruit and divide it among his party. It was a watermelon, and, returning with it into the canoe and opening the knife, he cut it into slices and presented them to his companions. As they ate it they looked much pleased, and on our beckoning to them they all came out of the canoe, drawing it up on the shore, and sat down upon the beach, the man giving me back my knife. After they had finished the melon, I made signs to the two men to rise and go with me, at the same time saying to my wife, "Will you be afraid to stay with the women?" She answered firmly, "Certainly not." The men hesitated to leave the women, supposing my dear partner to be no other than a *caballero*, till one of the women seemed sud-

denly to recognise her sex, when, speaking to the men to that effect, as I supposed, they readily went with me. I took them to the silk-cotton-tree, where our morning's provisions were, which we had scarcely tasted when we discovered the canoe. The salt beef and biscuit, with other things, I put into the basket, giving it to one of the men to carry, and to the other the canteen with water. I then returned with them to the beach; and, as we drew near, my companions laughed, and shouted to the women, who answered by clapping their hands, accompanied by vociferous expressions indicative of joy. Causing them to move a little higher up, I spread the provisions before them, of which they all ate, drinking the water at times with much eagerness, while Eliza and myself walked to and fro at a little distance. During all this time Fidele never barked, but kept quite close to the feet of his mistress, eying the negroes with fear and suspicion.

When they had finished their repast, which was scanty enough for so many, I made one of them take up the empty basket, and another the canteen, and then proceed in a body to the great tree. I made signs to them to lay down and rest. They instantly obeyed, and all but the elder man fell asleep. He and I endeavoured to converse, but could not understand each other in the least. I was satisfied, however, that he spoke Spanish, though perhaps in the same sort of way that the negroes of Jamaica speak English. If he had spoken pure Castilian, I should not have understood him the better for it. All that I could comprehend was that his name was Diego, and that he called the other man Shaver; which, as he repeated it several times, caused my dear wife to smile, at which old Diego laughed heartily, though ignorant of the joke. The man's name, no doubt, was Xavier, though pronounced in a manner that gave it a ridiculous meaning to our English ears. Our mirth awakened Xavier, who seem-

ed quite happy when Diego explained to him the part he had borne in our pleasantries; however, he soon lay down again, and fell asleep. My dear wife then suggested that, as these poor strangers had had but a scanty breakfast, it would be well to take Diego, and bring some provisions for a more ample dinner. I readily fell in with her benevolent proposal; and, putting the basket into the negro's hand, he appeared to understand that his services were required, and followed us through the woodland region without showing the least fear. He was delighted with the fountain of water at the turn of the promontory, and seemed greatly pleased at seeing the broods of ducks, and the goats feeding by the stream.

No doubt he expected to find a fine house and plenty of people; for, after passing along the path between the promontory and the rock, he gazed all about, and then at us, with a sort of amazement. He then followed us closely up to the plank house, where we collected some yams, biscuit, salted meat, and old pumpkins, with a few cocoanuts, and filled his basket. As we came out on the platform, he looked towards the brig, and then said something to me. I made signs to inform him she had been wrecked, and that all but ourselves had perished. He understood me perfectly well: his eyes filled with tears, and he covered his face with his hands. Poor negro! thy sympathies were awakened: thou thyself hadst been snatched from a watery grave; and the Divine spirit breathed into man became manifest in thee at this moment, without, perhaps, even thy knowing there is a God, and that He is thy Father, and the Father of all! My gentle Eliza was deeply affected by this language of universal nature, so feelingly spoken by this poor negro.

On our return to his sleeping friends, I stopped at the rocky point, and, taking up one of the rods which

lay there, baited the hook with a bit of raw pork that I cut from a piece in the basket, and presenting it to Eliza, I said, "Go, my dear, and catch us a fish." She took the rod, and, while Diego and I stood at the base of the rock, dropped the bait into the preserve, when a fish immediately seized it, and with a little exertion she drew it out upon the rock. Diego, on seeing the great size of the fish, caught in a moment, as he supposed, from the sea, and by a white woman too (for white women, he thought, could do nothing but yawn and count their beads), burst into an ecstasy, and sprang on to the rock to disentangle the struggling prize from the hook. My dear wife thanked him with a smile, and the next instant he descended with the fish in his hand. Thus provided, we proceeded to the cotton-tree, where we found all the party still asleep.

Diego seemed to think they had had sleep enough, for he roused them immediately on our arrival. They were startled at being so suddenly awakened, and the women appeared somewhat frightened; but the old fellow was a wag in his way, and seemed to enjoy the confusion he had occasioned, while, with an air of triumph, he held the fish over the face of one, and a great yam over another. After rubbing their eyes, they one and all began to talk and laugh, and we rejoiced to see in our new companions nothing but what was cheerful and inoffensive. "Shawveer," said I (imitating Diego as well as I could in pronouncing the name), and at the same time taking him by the arm, "come with me." He was much amused with hearing me try to call him by name. I led him to where there was a large upright stone standing between the cotton-tree and the open ground, and having taken with me a few leaves and some bits of stick, I struck a light, and, kindling them, made signs to him to build a fire on this spot. He was pleased with the task, and called to him one of the women, who was his wife. As she came up

I put my hand on his breast, saying "Shawveer;" then, touching his wife's shoulder, I at the same time pointed to him, and, repeating his name, pointed to her. After the pause of a second he understood my inquiry, and answered "Hachinta," when I repeated the word, patting her on the shoulder, and then left them to make up the fire.

Returning to the cotton-tree, I found Diego in earnest conversation with the other two women (or, rather, the other woman and a girl about seventeen years of age, the one his wife, the other his daughter), and they seemed full of surprise. I supposed he had been telling them of his seeing the brig, and of our misfortune; for, the moment I came up to them, his wife fell down before Eliza, weeping and kissing her feet. This scene sealed our friendship for these poor outcasts, and from that hour we cherished the feelings towards them of which they had set us so beautiful an example.

We now thought it best to retire to the plank house, and leave them to cook and eat their own dinner as they might choose; besides, it was time that we ourselves had some food. I beckoned, therefore, to Diego to follow me, and led him up to the little spring to replenish the canteen with water. On our return, I made them comprehend that we were going to retire for a while; but Diego had no doubt made known to his wife that we were without any one to help us, and, taking her daughter by the hand, and pronouncing the word "Mira," she tendered her to Eliza. My dear wife looked so kindly on the girl that she showed no reluctance in going with her, and we now left, followed by the young negress and our faithful little dog.

Mira took but little notice of anything, yet did not seem sulky. As soon as we entered the house, her new mistress cut a muskmelon, and gave her a slice of it, which she ate with evident pleasure. I hastened to take a fish from the preserve, and, having

duly prepared it, gave it to Mira, who helped it into the kettle with much adroitness ; she seemed also to know what she was about in roasting the yams. When the dinner was ready, it was served up on the table placed within doors ; and, after helping ourselves, I filled a plate and gave it to the girl on the platform, where she ate with great composure. When she had finished it I bored a young cocoanut, first giving her the milk to drink, and then, cutting off the top, handed it to her, with a spoon, which she knew very well how to use, eating with it the soft pulp, and showing signs of much satisfaction at our kind treatment.

After the dinner things were put away, and we had rested about a couple of hours, my dear wife made her new waiting-maid put four young cocoanuts into her basket, and with them we proceeded to join her friends at the plantation. They were glad to see us ; and Eliza, taking the cocoanuts, presented them one by one to each of the party. They were pleased at the promised treat, but had no knife ; so I gave Diego my clasp-knife, and made signs to him to keep it, which delighted him exceedingly. They now did full justice to the feast, and the fragments were not very heavy.

Poor creatures ! they all appeared very much exhausted, and, as negroes are not very particular about their lodging, they seemed quite content to take up their abode in the shed I had erected for the vegetables. But, to render it a little more comfortable, I made the men bring in some planks, and place them side by side upon the ground for their beds ; and this being done, my dear wife remained with the women, while the men and I went down to secure the canoe, the sail of which they brought up, to cover them at night.

About four o'clock we left them, taking the girl with us, and on our arrival at the plank house Eliza made a large quantity of coffee in the teakettle, and

sweetened it; then, pouring about three pints of it into a tin camp-kettle, she handed it to Mira, and also a basket containing biscuits and a small mug, and made a sign to her to take them to her friends: she replied by a pleasant look, and instantly set off at a good pace.

"My honoured husband," said my dear wife to me, after she was gone, "the coming of these people is an event so unexpected, that I sometimes think it a dream; however, I doubt not Providence has brought them for their good and ours, poor creatures! God has been merciful to them as to us, and it is our duty to share what we have with them. Indeed, they seem grateful, and disposed to be our servants, if we please to make them such." "We will be kind to them, love," I replied; "but for their happiness as well as our own, they must be accustomed to look up to us for everything, and therefore to wait upon us as servants, but not as slaves." "Dear Edward," she answered, "your judgment is always most prudent as well as most kind; and I hope we shall be able, in time, to teach them to know that God who delivered them from death, and placed them here in security and abundance."

In this strain our conversation continued until near sunset, when Diego returned with the girl, bringing the empty baskets and tin kettle, and, with many signs of thanks, bowed profoundly before us, after which he went away, and left his daughter with us. She was nearly worn out with the fatigue and anxiety she had undergone, and we ourselves, being somewhat weary from our hospitable exertions, retired early to the brig; but she did not follow us quite so willingly as before, when she saw us about to go on board. However, a kind look from Eliza, with my showing her that the vessel was fast moored, prevailed over her reluctance, and we *spread a bed for her on the cabin floor.*

Tuesday, 16th. We arose with the dawn, but Mira was still fast asleep. I dressed myself, and left my wife to awake her and follow me on shore. Without more ado, I walked over to the plantation, where I found the two men and their wives out before the shed. They greeted me evidently with grateful reverence, and, having returned them a kind salutation, I took Diego by the arm as a sign to go with me, and leading him to the beach, rowed him round in the punt to the rocky point. We then examined the fishpot, where I found two fish, which we brought on shore. I made him prepare them for cooking, and we then carried them to the plank house, where we met my wife, with her maid, coming from the vessel. Diego scarcely knew his daughter, her mistress having made her bathe, and dress herself in a white chemise and petticoat which she gave to her, and a coloured bandana kerchief tied gracefully round the head. Mira was quite elated, and showed herself with pride to her father, turning round and round with a sort of dancing step. He smiled and patted her shoulder, bowing at the same time to us. We now put some yams into one of the baskets, with a couple of melons and the fish, and signified to him that he must take them to his companions, which he did joyously, no doubt anticipating the pleasure with which they would be received.

We now sat down to our own breakfast of coffee and biscuit, of which Mira also partook, though at a respectful distance, sitting at our feet, with Fidele by her side, on the platform. During breakfast I complimented my wife on the change she had made in Mira, adding that I thought we should give the whole party two suits of clothes each. She was delighted with the idea, and we soon brought the articles necessary for the men from the seamen's chests on board. She then accompanied me, Mira carrying the bundles, to the cotton-tree plantation,

where I was to make the negroes array themselves, while she brought the women back with her for the same purpose. The latter, on seeing Mira's gay appearance, required no farther inducement to follow their new mistress, and I led the two men to the beach, and soon made them comprehend my intention. They accordingly threw aside their old dirty covering, and, having given themselves a thorough washing, each put on a check shirt and white duck trowsers which I handed them, and in which they looked trim enough. I rolled up the two duplicate suits, and signified to them that they were for a change. Both of the men kissed my hands, seeming very thankful, and I caused Diego to dig a hole in the sand and bury their miserable old garments.

I now took the two men over to the plantation, and endeavoured to make them comprehend that the roots, &c., were to be put into the shed, at the same time placing the spade and hoe in Diego's hands, as much as to say, "I deliver these things into your care," all which he understood. He evidently knew each plant; and when he saw the tobacco shoots, he put his finger and thumb to his mouth, in imitation of smoking. I proceeded next to the great pile of planks and other timber, which I had collected near the place intended for our new house, and, pointing to the timber, I was about to mark out two spots in the rear for them to erect each a hut for himself, when Xavier, with a grin of sudden joy, touched his hands and then the timber, and drawing out a plank, began a sort of pantomime, by which I soon understood that he was a carpenter—a discovery that pleased me exceedingly. We then stepped to the sites I designed for their huts, and I marked out an oblong square for each, sixteen feet by twelve, with which Xavier seemed well satisfied. At this instant my dear partner appeared with her three damsels, all looking equally clean and neat, and in high spirits; and the whole party congratulated each

other with bows expressive of their joy at meeting each other in such unusual finery.

Short as was the time we had been together, it had been long enough to establish perfect confidence, so that Eliza did not hesitate to remain with Diego and the women, while I took Xavier to the ship, to help himself to a saw, an axe, adze, and such other things as he might require. He was not a little amused at the construction of the plank house, which I showed him on our way; and he examined it over and over again, inside and out, to my no small entertainment too. After getting our tools we hastened back to the plantation, and in less than an hour I had the satisfaction to see both Diego and Xavier engaged in their respective employments. "I am happy at this sight," said my dear wife; "it has pleased God to relieve you, Edward, from a toil that, in such a climate, could not have been continued without ultimate destruction to your health." I, indeed, gratefully acknowledged the signal providence, and my sweet angel (whose soul was always full of heavenly thoughts) soon after left us, taking with her Mira and her mother Rota, to prepare some food both for us and them. As Diego was not now using the spade, Xavier borrowed it, and commenced digging holes for the uprights of his hut; but the ground proved rocky, being a red sandstone within a few inches of the surface, so that he could not accomplish his purpose. I therefore took him to the plank house and gave him the crowbar, and at the same time I made him take with him another hoe and spade.

After this I returned on board to get up some bags of nails of different sizes; and, with a view to expedite Xavier's work, I also took some pieces of torn sails. On joining Eliza I found dinner on the table, and Rota just leaving with our largest basket, well replenished with beef and pork, and flour cakes, for her friends at the plantation: my dear wife had

also furnished her with four knives, two tin cups, and two wooden platters to eat from. The good negress had proved herself handy at the culinary art, so that, to my great satisfaction, my dear wife had not been under the least necessity, as heretofore, of broiling herself over the fire. She was herself sensible of this relief; and, although she had never murmured, she now smilingly acknowledged her thankfulness for the assistance she had received. It was, perhaps, difficult to determine whether we or the negroes rejoiced most in the providential connexion which our similar misfortunes had brought about.—No doubt their change was very great: escaped from shipwreck, and most likely from slavery, hitherto strangers to Christian kindness, they must have felt sensibly the comfort of their lot; while we, on our part, appreciated their services, and hoped, by kind and wise measures, to secure their attachment and consequent happiness. I knew there was nothing pressing to be done at the plantation, and sent Mira for Diego about an hour after we had dined, having merely to pronounce his name, and point for her to go. They soon returned together, when I took him to the brig's side, gave him the bags of nails to carry, and then showed him the canvass I had deposited there, making him understand that he was to come back for it, and take it to the silk-cotton-tree, whither, with my wife, Mira, and Fidele, I now leisurely proceeded. Xavier easily comprehended that the canvass was to be nailed to the sides of his edifice instead of boards, and also, for the present, to be employed as a covering for the roofs. He had not been idle during my absence, having excavated several places for the uprights, which, he explained to me, were to be made by sawing a plank lengthwise into three parts—a very good idea. He saw I comprehended him, and was pleased that I expressed my satisfaction. Diego now took the crowbar, and went on

with digging the holes, while Xavier plied the saw, no doubt proud to show me how well he could handle it ; and, indeed, I was highly gratified to see him quite at home at his work. In the midst of this, we were agreeably surprised at seeing the two women take a hoe each, and go over among the Indian corn, and commence hoeing around the stems. No doubt Diego had sent them ; but it was delightful to us to observe such a spirit of industry manifested by the whole party.

While they were at work, my dear wife and myself walked arm in arm about the plantation : we visited our shaddock and orange plants at the north-east corner, and marked with pleasure the rapid growth of the latter. Strange as it may appear, we felt ourselves exalted in rank by the situation in which we were now placed ; and, without being tainted by pride, we experienced a sentiment within, which, affecting our external demeanour almost unconsciously, was likely the better to maintain our dignity with our people, without lessening our real kindness and sympathy towards them. As we walked along, my dear Eliza exclaimed, " How gracious is God, my Edward ! How, in a day, has he taken off all our burdens, and made us the protectors and supporters of those he has sent to serve us ! " On coming round again where the melons grew, she requested me to pluck two that were ripe, one of which she sent by Mira to her father, and the other she cut in slices, and gave them to Rota and the other woman, whom they called " Hachinta," a name that puzzled us a good deal, but which I have since learned the Spaniards write " Jacinta."

As the sun was now about setting, and there was plenty of provisions left from the people's dinner for their after-meal, we took our leave of them for the day. My wife and her damsel employed themselves for a few minutes in housing the ducks, which we found still loitering about the spring, and from

which we walked leisurely up to the plank house, followed by the goats. Here they and their kids received some slices of pumpkin from their mistress's kind hand, as also the poor armadillo, who was soliciting food at the bars of his enclosure. Mira had never before seen one of these creatures, so that it excited her wonder, and elicited some ejaculatory remarks to us not quite intelligible.

Coffee was soon prepared, and in presenting it, the negro girl raised a smile in my wife and myself by calling her Eliza when she addressed her. This was very natural, she having heard me thus address her; but I thought it right to correct her in this; and, though I was ignorant of the Spanish language, I knew it called ladies *donna* and *señora*, and therefore I said, "No: *señora*." Mira instantly understood me, and repeated "*Señora*" with an inclination of the body. Eliza smiled, saying, "I shall soon fancy myself a heroine in *Gil Blas*; but no doubt you are right, Edward." After coffee I regaled myself with a cigar; at the sight of it Mira was delighted, and, without losing a moment, ran and brought me fire to light it. We did not, however, stay long enough to encounter the sandflies, but retired to our vessel in good time, preceded by Fidele and followed by our maid, who no longer showed any fear.

Wednesday, 17th. I arose, as usual, with the dawn, and, leaving my wife and her maid to get together some things for our laundry, went to inspect the fishpot, in which I found three fine fish. I threw two of them into the preserve, reserving the other for present use; and when my dear wife and Mira came on shore, we breakfasted immediately, to give more time for business. Eliza now named "*Rota*" and "*Hachinta*," pointing to Mira to go for them. She went immediately, and soon returned with them. My wife then gave each of the women a second suit of clothes, and, making them bundle up the linen to

be washed, directed them to carry it before her to the streamlet, while she took the two washing-mallets in her hand and a piece of soap. On arriving there, she was able to set her two laundresses to work without any difficulty. After they were fairly engaged we walked away, followed by Mira, to the plantation, to see what the men were about. We found both of them busy in erecting the uprights, six of which Xavier had sawn out, and they appeared quite happy, and perfectly recovered from their exhaustion.

My dear wife and I had determined, when speaking to them, not to repeat any of their words except their own names, hoping thus to compel them to learn our language. On this principle I began to school Xavier, by pointing to the several instruments he used, and calling them by their English names, by which process he and his companions soon acquired a very competent knowledge of our terms for all the common articles of life; we always remaining silent when, through forgetfulness, they named them in Spanish. Mira had told them about her mistake in addressing my wife; after which both the men called her "señora," as did also the two women when they came over with Mira in the morning.

While the men were at work, we sat down under the shade of our favourite tree, a retreat always agreeable and interesting to us, and now doubly so, from its being the place whence we first descried our present help. "This indulgence won't do, Edward," suddenly exclaimed Eliza, smiling; "I must mind my own duties, and go to superintend our domestic concerns: the women are with the linen at the brook, and dinner must be got for the whole party." Saying this, she immediately left me. I remained for an hour overseeing the men, and was much pleased with the progress they made in the construction of their hut, and particularly with the

scientific manner in which Xavier went to work. When finished, these habitations would be at least twice as spacious as the plank house; and seeing that he perfectly understood what he was about, I made up my mind not to interfere, but leave to him entirely the completion of the job. As I passed the Indian corn in my walk home, I pulled some of the full-grown ears, and took them with me to roast. On reaching home, I found the cooking going on in fine style. My dear helpmate had taken Mira to fetch some pumpkins from the beds near the cave-spring, where we had planted that useful vegetable on our first landing, and where it was now growing most luxuriantly; and a great stew of salted pork, with a due proportion of vegetables and pepper pods, was under way. At noon, Mira was despatched to the cotton-tree for the men, and when they arrived, they and their wives found their dinner spread on the duck-hatch, near our pleasant fountain. They all seemed delighted with the stew, and the cool place we had chosen for them to eat it in. After dinner the men returned to the plantation, and the women to their task at the streamlet.

My dear Eliza and myself had agreed to dine later than usual. Our labour, indeed, being now little, our appetites were less importunate; and, besides, we felt it would be right to attend to the wants of our people first. It was time enough to raise the fishpot, therefore, after they had returned to their work, which I now did, and with great success, finding in it no less than five fine groupers. I threw four of them into the preserve, and, calling our maid, gave her the remaining one to prepare for cooking, and then to take it to her mistress. Having baited and replaced the fishpot, while our repast was getting ready I walked to our pumpkin and melon ground, between the rocky point and rivulet, and was gratified to see how the whole plantation was coming on, many of its products of all sorts being

already fit to eat—a matter of the greater gratulation, from our increased population; while our original store of fruits and vegetables, with the exception of a few yams and coccos, was now quite exhausted. However, as I found in the present abundant crop before me that there was no reason why we should be parsimonious, having plenty of seeds for more, I cut a couple of the melons, and took them home to my wife, one of which we ate after dinner, dividing it with the armadillo, which was now given its freedom for the first time, and seemed not at all disposed to run away, though still somewhat afraid of Fidele, rolling itself up every time the little dog attempted to play with it.

While eating our fruit, I remarked to my wife that I thought it would be prudent to remove the bag of doubloons from the shelf to my trunk in the vessel, lest curiosity might induce Mira some day or other to pry into its contents, and inform her friends of our riches. Eliza saw the propriety of the measure, which in the course of the afternoon I carried into effect. The women finished their task before sunset, when Mira went for the men, and brought them, with their wives, to regale themselves with coffee and flour cakes where they had dined. After enjoying that favourite beverage, they came up of themselves to the plank house, and in their grateful delight danced before us while we sat at tea: we could have dispensed with this mark of their satisfaction; but, out of respect for the feelings that dictated it, we refrained from any expression of disapproval. After they had finished, Diego, who appeared to be quite a courtier in his way, bowed several times to the señora and myself, and looking archly at me, with a smile said, "Don Edvardo! cigarro?" putting his finger to his mouth, and puffing from the lips as if he were smoking. I took the hint, and presented him with one cigar and Xavier with another; then pointing in the direction of

the cotton-tree plantation, they took their leave. I could not afford to smoke regularly myself and to supply them also, and I therefore did not indulge myself this night; so, after my dear wife and Mira had attended to the security and comfort of our livestock, I fastened the door as usual, and retired early, with my household, to our marine dormitory.

Thursday, 18th. This day and the two following, the men continued steadily at work upon the first hut, Diego occasionally employing Hachinta with her hoe among the corn and other plants in the neighbourhood of their place of labour. Rota was chiefly at the plank house with Mira and her mistress, assisting in smoothing the clean clothes and in cooking. I found sufficient to do on board, looking over the bills of lading to select out such things as might be required for coming events.

Sunday, 21st. We arose, as usual, with the dawn. I took my bath, dressed for the Sabbath, and went on shore, leaving my wife with Mira to go through the same ceremony. I hastened to the plantation to prevent the men from working, and arrived just as they were about to begin. I stopped them, but felt much embarrassed how to explain my motive and what I would inculcate. The poor fellows looked not a little surprised; they apprehended that something was wrong, and the more so as my aspect was graver than usual. Then stretching forth my arm as if to demand attention, I held up the extended fingers of one hand, with two of the other, bending them in succession, and making a sign of *to work* until after I had bent the sixth; then bending the other, I knelt on a plank that lay beside me, and raising my hands to heaven, I prayed, "Bless these people, O Lord, with thy holy Spirit, that they, even they, may be brought to a knowledge of thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord." Diego repeated "Jesu Christo," and crossed himself. I was delighted to perceive that I was understood, and that the name, at

least, of Christ was not a strange sound in their ears. We then put the working implements into the shed, and, pointing to my dress, I gave them to understand that they must go to the sea and wash, and put on clean clothes, and the women also.

I now returned to my dear wife to inform her of my success, for in talking this matter over we had feared there would be much difficulty in making a first impression. She came out to meet me in her straw hat, which she had not worn for some months, and I was agreeably surprised to see her in it again; it looked like a returning step to civilized life. She had also made Mira look quite trim and pretty.

Cakes had been baked and salt meat boiled on the preceding day, so that there was nothing to do but to heat the coffee; and, when it was nearly ready, Mira was sent to summon her friends to breakfast. We had debated whether we should allow them to eat with us on Sundays, and many arguments presented themselves both for and against it; but we finally decided, I think prudently, that such intimacy might possibly prove dangerous, not only to our peace, but to our ultimate safety; and we therefore determined to treat them kindly, yet not so as in any way to compromise the authority we had established in so short a time. They all appeared with our damsel, and made their obeisance to us as we sat on the platform before the plank house. They looked very clean and neat, and we complimented them by signs on their attention to our directions. We then desired Mira and her mother to take the provisions that had been prepared for their breakfast to the duck-hatch, which was soon done, for they all lent a helping hand, leaving Mira in a little time with us, who very quickly, and even nicely, set the table for our repast.

While at breakfast we discussed the propriety of having the people at morning service, and agreed that it was best; for, though they would not under-

stand what we should read, they would comprehend that we were engaged in devotion. However, we concluded to shorten the service by omitting the lessons, which we would read to each other when alone; and Eliza offered to sing a hymn before and after the prayers. To instruct these poor blacks in the first principles of Christianity required time and the power of communicating knowledge by language. After the breakfast things were removed, and the interior of our plank house, now to be our church, was put in order, I sent Mira for her people; and, not being ashamed of the sign of the cross, I seized on Diego's acknowledgment of its hallowed import, and when they were assembled, I took a little water, and dipping my finger in it, moved it on the forehead of each one present in the form of that sacred symbol, saying, "May it please thee, O God, to add this individual to thy holy Church." And this being done, my wife, while we yet stood, sang an appropriate hymn, in almost angelic strains, which seemed to produce a striking effect upon her hearers. Then kneeling down, they all followed our example, and I repeated the Lord's prayer, the belief, and the confession of sins, with heartfelt fervour. We now rose; and I read the general thanksgiving, followed by "We praise thee, O God!" after which my wife sang another beautiful hymn, and this short service was concluded by my repeating the benediction of our Church. When it was finished I took each of the people cordially by the hand, as did my dear wife, and, pointing to heaven, exclaimed, with devout ardour, "Bless us, O Lord! bless thy people!" The prayer-book was then shut and put respectfully away, after which we all went out together, my partner taking my arm, which example the other men and their wives reverentially imitated, poor solitary Mira and Fidele following separately behind.

I knew it would be impossible for these uneducated creatures to pass a whole day of absti-

nence from labour without drowsiness of mind, unless they had some amusement, and we therefore thought it might be well to let them make an excursion to some of the distant shores of the islands. We walked down quietly to their canoe, which had been washed out very clean, and making a sign to the men to get into it and row us round to the plank house, they cheerfully obeyed, leaving the women clapping their hands with a sort of childish delight as we pushed off. After landing us we sent them back for their wives, with whom they speedily returned, the canoe being very swift. My wife then went with Rota and Mira to the plank house, where she filled the large basket with cold provisions, which they brought down, and I made signs to Diego to put it in the canoe; then, pointing to the island opposite, I signified to him that I wished him to go there, but to return before sunset. He paused for a moment, and then, putting his hand to his mouth to represent drinking, he uttered the word "water." I nodded, and he set off for the canteen, which had been left at the plantation. Though I did not believe there was any cause for fear, still I thought the party should have some means of defence; so, by the time he reappeared with the canteen, I had brought down the two half-pikes: one I gave to him, and the other to Xavier, at which they appeared to be much pleased, and both immediately stepped into the canoe, beginning at once to shove off, for they had not understood that they were to take the women. I stopped the movement, however, and, taking hold of Rota, put her arm within mine, and walking about thus for a second or two, pointed to Diego and then to the island, by which they instantly comprehended that it was a party of pleasure that we intended for them; and the women again clapped their hands and laughed, when my dear wife presented them a couple of melons, and they stepped briskly into the boat. In short, the whole party

pushed out into the lake in great glee, and rowed swiftly towards the opposite shore.

When they were fairly off, wishing to keep sight of them, I went up to the house for the spyglass, which I slung across my shoulder, my pistols, as usual, occupying my belt; and giving my Eliza my arm, with Mira and our faithful little dog, we strolled leisurely through the woodland region, and took post under the great tree. From this point we watched the canoe until we saw the people land on the opposite island, in a bay, the beach of which appeared to be bounded on each side by a ledge of rocks, having a beautiful and finely-wooded conical hill of considerable elevation on the north, and a steep rocky promontory on the south, with well-wooded hills in the background, apparently half a mile or rather more from the shore. I then adjusted the focus of the spyglass, and could see each man and his wife, according to our example, walking arm-in-arm up the beach, the men holding their pikes. My dear wife could not steady the glass so as to bring it to bear on the objects: I therefore placed three sticks at a little distance from each other in the ground, crossing them near the top, which presented a rest for the glass, and she could then see distinctly all their movements. Mira, too, from the same position, caught the sight of her distant friends instantly, at which she was both astonished and delighted, running from one end of the glass to the other, and applying her eye to both with increased amazement. In about half an hour we saw the party re-embark and row round the rocky shore to the northward, where they landed again on a sandy beach, from whence they walked up towards the woods. However, they soon returned, and again rowed along shore, sometimes observed by one, and sometimes by the other of us; but Mira was the *most indefatigable*, no doubt that she might be able *to astonish them by telling them all they did while they were away.*

Having traced them to the farther end of the sandy beach, where they opened their basket and sat down under the rocks to dine, it being now past meridian, we took up our spyglass to return to the plank house, where our own cold dinner was laid to receive us. We ate with thankfulness, blessing God for all the bounties his providence had bestowed upon us. By way of dessert, we regaled ourselves with a fresh muskmelon and a little wine, the former of which we shared with Mira and the armadillo. The spyglass was again placed on a rest, and after I had discovered the canoe, Mira was left to watch it, while my Eliza, with her gentle voice, read to me several chapters of Ezekiel. When she had finished, we prayed together to God for the continuance of his grace, and that he would pardon anything we had done amiss this day in our zeal to convert the poor negroes to a knowledge of his will.

We now took another peep at our wandering friends, and followed them into the creek beyond the place where we had had the encounter with the peccaries. My wife, on seeing them there, expressed some apprehension lest they should meet those creatures and be hurt. But I told her, as they appeared to be safely in the creek, and had therefore passed the place, there could be nothing to fear. Leaving Mira at the spyglass, Eliza and I now sauntered about, amusing ourselves with throwing some corn to the poultry, the young of which had attained a good size. About an hour before sunset the party could be seen rowing out of the creek, and this was a signal to get coffee ready against their return: we meant it as a treat; and as we had plenty of Irish butter on board, my dear wife added a frugal portion of that luxury to the nice flour cakes which Mira now put before the fire to warm. We had not made our preparations any too soon, for the maid had but just time to place the coffee, with the

hot bread and butter, on the duck-hatch near the spring, when the canoe with her friends reached the shore.

As they were landing we received them with a smile, and a few words spoken in a kind accent, which made their meaning sufficiently intelligible. Mira, meanwhile, hastened to tell them of the comfortable repast we had ordered to be prepared for them, at which they all, in various ways, expressed their satisfaction and gratitude. But Diego would not go to the hatch until he had taken me to the canoe, where he showed me several crayfish and a great many large shells, among which were some rock oysters: he had also brought a variety of plants, or their leaves, and some roots. I could not make him understand that to collect such things was not the object of his excursion, and that I would rather he should not so employ himself on the Sabbath-day; and I owed it to his motives to appear even to be pleased, feeling that he had not knowingly done any wrong. This over, he went to his coffee, quite satisfied both with himself and me. When he rejoined the party we heard Mira's tongue going, interrupted only by the laughter of Xavier or of the women, and sometimes of the whole party. Doubtless she was imparting to them her knowledge of what they had been doing in their absence; but Diego soon guessed the truth of the matter, as we supposed, for he patted her on the back, and, looking her in the face, said something very knowingly, seemingly in triumph. When they had finished their meal, the men came respectfully to me, and I went with them again to the canoe, where they delivered to me the two boarding-pikes. I then showed Diego that he must deposite their crayfish, oysters, and conchs in the crib I had made for the crayfish I had myself caught. As the men pushed off in the canoe to fulfil my orders, the women kissed my dear wife's hand, and proceeded through the

woodland region to join their husbands at their hut. We now returned to the plank house and refreshed ourselves with tea, but Mira did not seem to relish it as well as her friends had done their coffee: she, however, did not the less enjoy her cakes, and drank some warm water and sugar with them, which seemed quite to her taste. As the evening closed in, she and her mistress scattered some corn for the fowls and pigeons, and we then all retired, peaceful and happy, to our vessel and to rest.

Monday, 22d. The early dawn found us up, and active for the occupations of the week. My wife employed herself with the women in many domestic arrangements. I visited the men, supplying them, from time to time, with what was wanted for their work from the vessel, which kept me pretty busy going to and fro during the forenoon. So rapid was the progress they made in building the hut, that before evening they had fitted on a complete framework for the sloping roof. At the approach of sunset I caused them to desist, making signs to Diego that I wished to see what the leaves and roots were which he had brought in the canoe. He showed me some palm-leaves a little different from those near the plantation, and made me understand that they were to be made into hats. He then took me to a spot near the little spring, where he had put in some suckers of the wild banana, which he had also found. I knew the plant, having seen it in its cultivated state in Jamaica. Pleased with his zeal, I returned, and sent some cold salted beef and biscuit by the women for his and Xavier's supper, and, after taking coffee, we retired to our ship.

Tuesday, 23d. The hut was now ready for the canvass; and all things for its completion being on the spot, I left the two women to assist Xavier, while I took Diego with me, accompanied by my wife, her maid, and Fidele, to the cocoanut grove. We went in the punt, which he paddled along at least quite

as well as I could. He and Mira appeared to be much pleased with what they saw ; but our plantation there had been rather neglected : however, many melons, as well as table pumpkins, were quite fit to cut, which our damsel set about doing, under the direction of her mistress ; and while Diego employed himself with the hoe, of which there was much need, I took the gaskets, and, to his great wonder and amusement, climbed one of the trees, and knocked down about a score of the nuts with my hatchet. I quickly followed the shower, and, cutting a nice young one through husk and all, presented it to my Eliza to drink its milk. I then pointed to Diego and Mira to help themselves, which they did by no means sparingly, the good old negro never failing, however, to offer the opened nut to my wife or myself before he would taste it himself. After this refreshment, while Mira was carrying the gathered melons and pumpkins, and the remaining cocoanuts to the punt, my dear wife and myself visited the capsicums, which, to our great delight, we found in flower ; and we here sat down to rest a while on our accustomed ledge.

Our party returned to the plank house at about noon, and a similar dinner to that of the previous day was quickly prepared ; but Diego added some of his oysters to our repast, which he opened for us with the clasp-knife I had given him, and we found them excellent. In the afternoon we visited the cotton-tree plantation, whither Diego had gone before us, and where we now found both men and women hard at work, to complete the hut that day. We looked on with great satisfaction ; and, having made Mira serve them out some watermelons and a few cocoanuts to add to their supper of salted meat, we said "good-evening" and retired.

Wednesday, 24th. This morning I found the hut entirely enclosed, and set Diego and the women at work in digging holes for the uprights of the second

hut, while Xavier was fitting up the interior of the one that was finished, on the plan of that of the plank house, placing boards for a mattress bed, and a few more for shelves. All this was accomplished before breakfast, and immediately after it he sawed out the uprights, and began upon the other hut. During this and the three following days the men worked diligently at their second habitation, while the women were employed in cooking the provisions, or in doing such other things as my wife directed.

Sunday, 28th. We arrayed ourselves on the morning of this sacred day in clean clothes, our bodies having been made clean with water, and prayed to God to give us a clean heart. Soon after we landed at the plank house, the two men, with their wives, came to us in fresh attire, and saluted us. A breakfast of coffee was prepared for them, with some flour cakes and butter; and after their meal and our own, as on the previous Sabbath, we went to prayer, lengthening the service a little, my beloved Eliza, as before, singing a hymn at the beginning and end. They behaved with great decorum, and showed neither inattention nor restlessness.

After prayers we again gave them a basket of provisions, with the canteen and the pikes, and I made Diego understand that I wished him to row round the promontory. As they could not, as yet, profit either by our reading or conversation, I did not know how they could better employ their time; for we were fearful that we might disgust them with the rest of the Sabbath if we should dictate observances, the meaning of which they could not at present be made to comprehend. The women now stepped into the canoe as a matter of course, and the men pushed off from the shore in great spirits. In about an hour they had rounded the promontory, and appeared close under the brig's stern; and, hav-

ing taken our station on her quarter-deck, we saluted them as they passed. They then rowed to the northward, between the beach and the reef, and with the glass we saw them land under the rocky point which had threatened us with a second shipwreck after escaping from the reef. Here they left the canoe, and we lost sight of them. After waiting a long time and seeing nothing of them, we went on shore to dinner, leaving Mira to watch their movements. She at last discovered them pushing out from the land: I had then returned on board, and, taking the glass, followed them until they got among the rocks where the brig had struck, where, again losing sight of them, I returned the glass to Mira, and my dear wife and myself sat down to read our Bible.

Night was approaching, still they did not make their appearance, and we became very anxious about them, when, suddenly, as the sun was about setting, we saw them rowing up the lake. They, of course, must have doubled the island and rowed round it, by which I could now form some idea of its extent. Coffee had been prepared, and we received the adventurers as the lost found again. The men were tired, but our kind reception and a plentiful meal soon revived them. Their canoe, now as before, was not without a cargo: they had taken a turtle, and several shellfish, large and small, of the conch and other kinds, besides having collected some vegetable productions. I could, however, say nothing about this now; so, after taking their repast, I contented myself with making Diego understand that he must carry everything round to the beach near the cotton-tree plantation, which he did. One reason I had for this was, that Eliza might not see the turtle until its meat was brought to her to be dressed. After the people departed to their rest, of which they had much need, we regaled ourselves with tea, and *then retired to our vessel.*

Monday, 29th. I visited the plantation early in

the morning, and found the men already at work on the second hut; but, taking Diego aside, I made him understand that he was to kill the turtle, and that Rota must prepare it for dinner. It was but a chicken compared with the former one, not weighing above sixty pounds, shell and all. I then left them and returned to breakfast. In about an hour Rota arrived, with the turtle cut up, carrying it on her head in the calapach or upper shell: she set it down on the platform before my dear wife, who at first did not seem to know what it was; but she soon recognised it, and I was glad to perceive that she did not manifest any signs of aversion or disgust. Such is the nice distinction made by sensitive minds: had she seen it alive, she probably would not have consented to its being killed; at any rate, I doubt whether she would have consented to eat of it. I picked out the callipee, or under part, for ourselves, and made Rota take the rest to dress for the people's dinner; and, that she might make it savoury, my kind Eliza gave her some capsicums and allspice to season it. We all greatly enjoyed the treat.

During the remainder of the week no effort was spared to complete the second hut, so that by Saturday night it was finished, and both families comfortably lodged. We had taken mattresses from the brig, and such other conveniences as we thought they would need. Thus they were each in possession of a commodious habitation—a home with ourselves in this Heaven-bestowed retreat—and we were made happy in seeing them comfortably lodged, and surrounded by so many other blessings.

Sunday, 5th May. The sanctity of the day was duly observed. After divine service we walked with the whole company to the top of the promontory, and passed the evening in inspecting the people's huts, and in visiting everything most interesting around them.

Monday, 6th. It was now time to dig the yama

and cocos, and also to gather in the ripe melons and pumpkins. The Indian corn, too, was nearly ripe, so that there was no time to be lost. Diego and the women, therefore, set briskly to work, and, after making some additions to my shed for receiving the harvest, Xavier joined them. They were very industrious, and in less than four days everything was brought from the cocoanut-grove plantation and housed, and by the following Saturday all the rest of our mature products from different spots, with the exception of the corn and tobacco, was safely stored; besides, there were a great number of melons and pumpkins still growing. We were surprised and no less thankful at seeing so abundant a crop from such small sowings. While the negroes were thus busily at work, I kept them in fish, and Mira, under my dear wife's direction, prepared all their meals, which were furnished regularly and liberally, with now and then coffee in the evening as a treat.

Tuesday, 7th. The sun was in our zenith at noon to-day, not casting any shadow whatever. I took advantage of this fact to calculate with some degree of accuracy our situation as to latitude: thus, allowing four days to a degree from the time of the sun's transit over the equator, or the 10th of March (the day of the equinox*), to the present time, it gave fourteen degrees and a half, which I concluded to be pretty nearly the latitude of the islands.

Sunday, 12th. We endeavoured this day to convey some religious instruction to our poor benighted friends. They listened attentively and patiently, but Diego alone appeared to comprehend anything, and he but little; yet this little was one step onward.

* The editor was a little startled at this declaration, until it was recollectcd that in the year 1752 eleven days had been taken out of the old *almanac*, by which the calendar was thrown back so many days upon the sun.

Monday, 13th. The women came over early, with their husbands' clothes and their own, to wash them at the brook. Meanwhile Diego continued his husbandry labours, and Xavier was occupied with putting a sloping board roof on the plank house, the better to protect its interior from the rains we might soon look for, from what I had learned respecting the seasons in the Caribbean Sea.

Tuesday, 14th. I handed out a keg of red ochre and some oil from the fore-cuddy, and directed Xavier how to paint the canvass coverings of the huts, and by Thursday night he had given them two coats, which would not only render them proof against rain, but impart to them a gay and pleasing aspect. While he was thus engaged, Diego housed the ears of corn and the tobacco-leaves, and during the last two days of the week they both employed themselves beyond the silk-cotton-tree in clearing away the brushwood from before the rock, over which the beautiful little stream from the spring, from the long absence of rain, now fell like a silver thread.

Saturday, 18th. The sun rose in a haze, the clouds began to mount up from the westward, and there was but little breeze all the day. By the evening we had completed our operations, and just in time, for about ten o'clock it began to rain in torrents.

On the morning of the following day, however, it was again fair, with a clear sky, so that we met for prayers at the usual hour. But, at about three o'clock in the afternoon, the clouds opened upon us in a deluge for two hours, without wind, and then it cleared up. It continued to rain every day in like manner for the seven following days, during which we took the best care of ourselves we could, and attended carefully to our stock. We also improved the opportunities which occasional intervals of clear sky afforded, to cut down thirteen trees of the *cat-bage-palm*, which grew abundantly on the high

ground at the south end of the cotton-tree plantation. This was done to keep the men in exercise, and to assist in building our new house, when the time arrived for commencing it. The tops of these trees furnished us also with a succulent and agreeable vegetable, especially when boiled with our salted meat.

Saturday, 25th. The sun rose this morning with unusual brilliancy: the atmosphere had been tempered by the late weather to an ethereal purity; the rains had ceased, and not a cloud was to be seen. Diego lost no time in making me understand that, after Sunday, he and the women must be very diligent in planting the yams, coccos, corn, and other seeds. The four cocconut-trees put in round the plank house had grown rapidly, as had also those between the plank house and the beach; the time, indeed, was most propitious to vegetation. We were all busy to-day with airing things that were wet from the late rains, and the evening was signalized by a great catch of mullet by torchlight, much to the amusement, if not surprise, of our negro friends.

Sunday, 26th. We all met in our Sunday dress at divine service, and after my dear wife had sung a hymn, we endeavoured to make the people repeat the Lord's prayer after us, which they tried to do. It could not be explained to them at once; but we succeeded in making them understand that the God to whom we prayed in the address, "Our Father who art in Heaven!" stood in a relation to us all like that of Diego to Mira; and this was a great point gained, as they now had some idea of the object of our worship. We also succeeded in making them comprehend that whatever we ate or drank, and all the fruits of the earth, were his gift, and that we therefore prayed to Him for "our daily bread." We this day went through the greater part of the service in their presence; and at night, when we retired to *rest*, we *servently* poured forth our thanks to the

Lord of heaven and earth for blessing our endeavours thus far, in opening the minds of these kind-hearted creatures to a knowledge of his being, and of his paternal character.

Monday, 27th. After the women had finished their morning's task, they were put under Diego's direction; and I determined that Xavier should employ himself principally in the erection of our long-contemplated new dwelling. To this end I furnished him with the following plan: size, forty-four feet by sixteen; height of walls, fourteen feet; the interior to be divided into three parts; the centre great room, sixteen feet long, with one on each side of fourteen feet. There were plenty of materials for the projected edifice: squared uprights, planks, boards, laths, and shingles; and, as I mentioned before, thirteen trees of the cabbage-palm had been brought to the spot, seven of which were from sixteen to eighteen feet long, and the other six from fourteen to sixteen feet, clear of their heads: these trees, when squared, were to form the basis of the framework. I hoped, therefore, that, with occasional assistance, as all the materials were at hand, he would be able to finish the building in six months.

Xavier's work being thus laid out before him, I sent for Diego, to get him under way in the agricultural department. I gave him a quantity of yams and cocos to plant; also about two bushels of the old Indian corn, some of all the seeds we had collected from time to time from our fruits as we ate them, and more than half of the tobacco seeds still unsown. He carried them all carefully to the storehouse near the cotton-tree, which was to be the centre of most of his operations, though we had minor plantations of a few melons in the neighbourhood of the cave-spring and at other places, to be handy on occasion.

CHAPTER X.

THINGS had now settled down into a regular train, and it would be little more than a repetition of what has been before related to give an account of each day's transactions. Suffice it to say that we continued to live peacefully and happily, and had increased cause for thankfulness in the abundant experience of God's goodness. The men were industrious in their respective occupations, and in three months the results of their labour were highly creditable to them. Diego had laid out his grounds well, and all his plants were nearly matured. The house was up, and only the interior work remained to be done. Our negro friends began to address us, on all ordinary matters, in our own language; and we hoped they already knew something of their Redeemer, and of the moral duties that are owed by man to man. In July there were refreshing showers, which fell generally in the night, and especially after a great display of sheet-lightning in the horizon, whose brilliant yet silent coruscations can scarcely be imagined by those who have never resided in tropical regions.

Monday, August 26th. My dear wife and myself had much reason to be satisfied with the prospect of being comfortably lodged before the winter, which, although not much colder than an English summer, yet in this climate is attended frequently with stormy, disagreeable weather. We beheld everything around us prosperous and promising. Our young goats were nearly full grown, and our three broods of chickens had nearly attained maturity. The old hens were again laying; and, trusting to their prolific nature, we now ventured to regale our-

selves occasionally with a few of their delicious eggs at breakfast. Some of the young ducks had been lost, but there remained a large number; so that now and then we treated ourselves to a roasted duckling, as a delicacy. The chocolate plants had sprung up to the height of half a foot, and the capsicums and bird-peppers were full of fruit. Diego's plantation was delightful to look at. The large red leaves of the cocos had a brilliant effect; and the majestic Indian corn, with its feathery top and great bulging cobs protruding leaf-covered from the stem, was a noble sight. The yams, with their small stalks, were but little attractive to the eye, but their abundant usefulness stamped a value even on their homely appearance. The tobacco, thinned out to give it vigour, spread its broad dark-green leaf on a stem four or five feet high, exhibiting a yellow crown of clustering seed capsules here and there, on a plant destined for seed, the tops of the others being cut off to give an increased size to their leaves. Our pineapples had just begun to form, and the six sugarcanes had attained a height of nearly eight feet, with stalks and upper leaves of vivid green. All our fruit-trees, too, had grown considerably; so that we might live to see the orange-grove and the shaddocks in full bearing, adding much to the beauty and comfort of our residence.

But the improvement made by our negro friends was still more gratifying than all this. Their orderly conduct, their attachment, their progress in speaking English, and the pleasure they seemed to take in learning what God in his Scriptures had revealed to man, gave us a deep feeling of holy joy. They now comprehended the ten commandments, and would not do anything on the Sabbath day that could be considered as labour or ordinary work. They seemed also to understand the purport of the Lord's prayer pretty well, and that memorable direction of our blessed Redeemer, "Do unto others even as ye

would have them do unto you." Perhaps, too, with a sigh, they would sometimes compare the conduct of their former Christian masters in Cuba with this truly Christian precept, and not know how to reconcile the discrepancy.

By this time we had been able to make out their story. They had been purchased, and shipped in a schooner at Trinidad (a town on the south side of Cuba) for some person at La Guyra, on the Spanish Main. Two nights before they appeared off our island, the schooner had struck on a reef, and almost instantly bilged and filled with water. The captain and his crew took to the boat, and without mercy left the poor negroes to their fate; but, fortunately, there was a canoe on deck, and the weather being fine, they soon contrived to get it into the water. They made a sail out of a sheet which they brought from the cabin, and, with a few dried *calavanças*, a species of bean, for their subsistence, they put off before the wind, to take their chance of making land or being picked up at sea by some vessel. They discovered our promontory at daylight, and, seeing the opening between the two headlands, struck their sail and paddled in. Such was their simple and affecting story.

In a few weeks our second harvest was gathered in, and so abundant was it that it seemed more than would suffice for six months' consumption. This labour being completed, Diego and Hachinta were set to assist Xavier, by bringing to him whatever he needed, while Rota made herself so useful in our domestic concerns, that Mira did little more than perform the duties of a waiting-maid.

The 11th of September being my dear wife's birthday, on which she attained her one-and-twentieth year, I made it a day of jubilee, and entertained the whole party more sumptuously than usual, giving them a couple of young full-grown drakes for dinner, a little wine, plenty of coffee, and a few ci-

gars. I drank the dear one's health myself, after our own dinner, in a glass of Canary, continuing to sit before our plank palace, enjoying, in the cool shade of the promontory, her sweet conversation. But our friends soon appeared and claimed our attention. They offered their congratulations in their own simple and affectionate way, and, blithesome and happy, finished the day with dancing: it was an anniversary that will be ever dear to my memory.

The plantation house was finished on Saturday, the 30th of November. Being situated on a high, rocky spot, the ground about it was dry, and free from rank herbage, while its elevation above the huts of Diego and Xavier gave to it an air of superior importance. Indeed, things are great or small only by comparison. The interior of the house appeared to be all we could desire: the floors boarded; the doors and shutters well made; one large door opening in front, opposite to the lake, while a second, in the rear, looked towards the mountainous promontory. The two end rooms were boarded over at the top, and the southernmost one was fitted up with shelves for a storeroom. The great central hall we left without any covering except the raftered roof of the house, and this gave it a cool and lofty appearance.

Sunday, 1st December. Our Sabbath devotions had now assumed a more solemn character: our people responded in the Litany, and also to the prayers, by the "Amen;" and the residue of the day was mostly employed in giving them religious instruction. Mira could read English words of two syllables, and seemed not a little vain of this acquirement, which we hoped would prove as a grain of mustard-seed, in due season becoming a large plant, and reproducing its kind.

Monday, 2d. Every one being now at leisure, I determined to open the hold, and set seriously to work in getting out the furniture that had been

shipped for us at Bristol. As the men were now able to understand me pretty well, I commenced operations with full confidence of soon accomplishing this object. The mainmast of the brig being gone, of course there was wanting the mainstay to fix a purchase-tackle to, and there were no main shrouds or mainyard on which to fix a guy. We, however, contrived to get the starboard foreyard-arm aft, between the shrouds and mast, and making fast a double purchase to it, we then bowsed on the lift and steadied it, so that the end of the yard-arm being over the main hatchway, with the tackle attached, nothing farther was required to enable us to go to work but to fix a guy to an outrigger made fast to the fore-shrouds. This job, altogether, cost us the whole day. But on Tuesday, after clearing away the remainder of the boards and planks, of which there were now not a great many, we set our contrivance to work. We commenced with hoisting up part of the cargo shipped at Jamaica, viz., American flour, Indian corn, biscuit, sugar, coffee, and rum, all of which were in barrels. Skids were fixed from the sides of the brig, so that we could lower the barrels directly upon the shore. But we found so much labour in rolling the first two or three across the isthmus, to the point where they were to be carried by water to the storehouse, that I had the canoe and punt brought alongside, and determined to put on board of them the remainder directly from the brig. We concluded it was safest, however, instead of loading both boats, to put two barrels into the punt, and employ the canoe in towing her. In this way they made two trips the first day, and each day afterward three, so that by the end of the week we had conveyed twenty-six barrels to the plantation, besides the three that were rolled to the other side of the isthmus. There were still remaining in the brig about sixty casks that had been shipped at Jamaica. two only of which were rum, and I

had a good mind to bore these and let their contents out, but was fearful of giving umbrage to my good fellows by so suspicious an act. Of the barrels sent away, six contained flour, six biscuits, six sugar, six coffee, four Indian corn, and one rum. The men worked with great adroitness and diligence, and no accident happened during the whole operation.

Sunday, 8th. We observed this day with due solemnity.

Monday, 9th. The men were employed for some time in getting round to the plantation the three casks from the west side of the isthmus; after which, the women assisted them in rolling up the other barrels to the open ground, where planks were laid over them for the present to shade them from the sun. This occupied the whole of Monday. On Tuesday morning I made them roll the barrel of rum, one of flour, one of biscuits, one of sugar, and one of coffee, into the apartment of the plantation-house designed for a storeroom. My dear wife, meanwhile, had made the women bring different fruits and vegetables from the temporary shed, and place them on the shelves in this room, or in other parts of it which had been fitted for their reception. But we were all at a loss how to dispose of the barrels still lying out of doors, for I had not at first contemplated bringing away so many. However, Diego relieved my mind by offering his house for a warehouse until Xavier and he could build one, which was readily accepted, and all the barrels were rolled there; Xavier, meanwhile, having courteously offered a part of his own house to his friend. These and some other arrangements occupied the whole of Tuesday. On Wednesday morning we again went into the hold, and got at the cases and packages containing our household stuff without difficulty, as they lay on the top of the heavy goods shipped in England. We unpacked them where they

were, and were much pleased to find their contents all safe. Most of the articles were taken on shore by hand, in baskets or boxes, and carried in the same way to our new house. The women were delighted with the pots, and pans, and kettles, the pewter, and the crockery-ware; and clapped their hands and shouted aloud when they saw the glass, the tea-equipage, and all the truly English et ceteras, as knives, forks, silver spoons, &c., sheets, table-cloths, and other napery, with all the requisites for household comfort, eabinet, chair, and table furniture, and bedstead excepted. These latter articles were to have been made at Honduras, where mahogany is abundant; but we had mahogany here also, though small; and we had Xavier; and, as our wants in that way were few, those few could soon be supplied by his skill and industry.

By Friday evening all our things were removed from the brig to the plantation-house, including the store-chest in the steerage-passage, a few dozens of wine from the lockers, and the box of cigars, with such other desirable or useful articles as were to be found in the cabin or staterooms. We slept on board that night for the last time, and took our leave next morning, with a mixture of satisfaction and regret, of our blessed ark, as I may call our stranded vessel, where we had enjoyed so many months of security, peace, and comfort. On Saturday our trunks and cot were brought on shore, and the dining-table from the cabin, with the two camp-stools. These latter I left in the plank house instead of the two chairs, which were transferred to our new residence. My dear helpmate, with her maids, put everything in place, and by noon nothing remained to be done but to sling our cot in the bedroom, and to set the table and two chairs in the great hall. We were too much engaged to think of dining in state *this day, and, besides, dinner was to be prepared for the next day also, while numerous other matters*

demanded present attention. In the evening we regaled the whole party with coffee, and I gave to each of the men a couple of cigars, indulging myself with one also. When the sun was set we had some fears of a visit from the sandflies, but were most happy in not seeing nor hearing any of these little tormentors. On retiring to rest, we returned thanks to God for our comfortable habitation, and all the blessings his good providence had bestowed upon us. But we did not sleep very soundly: we heard noises we were unaccustomed to, which we afterward found were made by lizards, some of which creatures we had occasionally seen; but in the morning we were greeted by the song of the tropical nightingale, and rose quite refreshed and in good spirits.

Sunday, 15th. The morning of this Sabbath was solemnized in the great hall by appropriate devotions, and the remainder of the day was passed in the same quiet and simple way as heretofore.

Monday, 16th. I directed the men to tow the punt round to the brig early in the morning, where I met them after I had breakfasted. The carpenter's chest was got upon deck, lowered into the punt, and committed to the charge of Xavier. Some additional spades, hoes, axes, hatchets, and billhooks were next brought up, which were to be deposited in our storeroom for Diego's use; and with this cargo the men were sent away, with orders to return. During their absence I selected two of the best of the seamen's chests, and filled them up with the clothing taken from others. When the men came back, I made them get up a barrel of beef and one of pork, which I directed them to take to the storeroom, and to wait there till I returned. I remained on board some time after they had left, collecting the residue of the captain's property, and placing it in his stateroom; and, as the *cabin-door* was still in its place, I duly fastened it.

It being now near one o'clock, I walked over to the plantation-house to dinner. Eliza received me with smiles, and dressed as when in England. I flew to her arms as if we were just meeting after a long separation. "My beloved Edward," said she, "how gracious is our God! how much happiness does He bestow on us!" It was the sentiment that then filled my own heart. I saw my dear wife restored to her former gentlewomanly condition by his providence, relieved from toil and every menial office; and, may I add, I saw a table covered with a clean damask cloth, laid out with all the conveniences of European comfort, to which my eyes had long been strangers.

While dinner was being served up, Eliza took me into the storeroom to show me how well the men had arranged the casks, and herself and the damsels the various articles for housekeeping. Everything, indeed, was in the best order, and I was highly gratified with so goodly a sight. Rota sent in our dinner as nicely cooked and served as if she had been an apprentice in my lord-mayor's kitchen: a fine fish at the head, a piece of boiled salt pork at the foot, a pumpkin-pie on one side, and a roasted white yam on the other, with capsicums, vinegar, mustard, and all the et ceteras. After giving thanks to the Giver of all things, we ate our dainty viands with an indescribable satisfaction, finding gratitude now as ever our sweetest sauce. When the cloth was removed, a fine melon and a bottle of wine decanted were placed before us. I took a slice of the fruit, and drank one glass of the wine to my dear wife's health. Not tarrying longer, we arose, and walked together to the plank house, the path to which, through the goodly trees, was now well trodden; and, as soon as I perceived the men in the canoe, I left Eliza with Mira, and proceeded on board.

My sturdy fellows soon got up the seamen's two chests from the steerage, and a cask of Irish butter

from the hold, after which I had all the hatchways battened down fore and aft, and the companion-door closed. Then taking two bits of stick of unequal length in my hand, with their ends projecting, I told my men that the chests contained clothing; that I did not know which of them was the best, but he that drew the longest stick should have his choice. They were delighted at the prospect of each possessing such a treasure, and highly amused with the idea of drawing lots. They drew, and the choice fell to Xavier: "I get big stick, I take big chest;" and he did so, instantly marking it with his knife. Diego's ready *couteau* soon performed the same operation on the other. The chests were then lowered down into the punt, and also the cask of butter. As they were pushing off I showed them the keys, at which they laughed; but I did not intend they should have them until I came to the plantation. After their departure I rejoined Eliza, and told her what I had been doing. She seemed much pleased, and said she would follow my example by giving the women some striped cotton (of which she had several pieces) to make up for themselves, the cutting out of which she would herself superintend. We remained a while at the plank house, and, among other matters, discussed the expediency of removing a colony of the young fowls and ducklings to our new habitation.

In returning home we met the men bringing up the butter, which they placed in the storeroom, after which I gave them their keys; and when the women knew what they were for, the whole party went off together to the water-side to help up with the chests, and to see, no doubt, what they contained. This important operation took up no little time, and it was nearly seven o'clock before Rota returned to serve up our coffee. The evening was cool, and there were not any sandflies to annoy us; it was therefore pleasant to sit with open doors, look-

ing out upon the tranquil lake, distant from us about two hundred yards, discoursing on what we had been doing or what we intended to do. Mira and Fidele, meanwhile, slept cosily together on the floor; and in due time, our own eyes inclining to slumber, the doors were closed, and, making Mira spread her mattress in the hall, we retired to our room.

Tuesday, 17th. In the morning I sent for Xavier, and told him, if he and Diego could be contented to lodge together a little longer, I should like to have him erect a proper poultry-house, with roosts and laying compartments for the hens, and suitable accommodations below for the ducks—the house to be stocaded round with stakes and wattles. I made him understand me, and he undertook the task cheerfully. I now gave directions to Diego to try his skill at a new fishpot, the old one being nearly worn out; also, to enlarge the crayfish enclosure so as to hold a turtle occasionally. I said to him, at the same time, that I should expect him to supply us with fish as well as vegetables, but charged him never to attempt to catch any of the pigeons, nor to take their eggs, nor, indeed, in any way to disturb them. This, I knew, was my dear Eliza's wish; but, I must confess, my principal reason for the injunction was to keep him and the rest of the people out of the cave. Diego promised to mind all that I had said to him, but took occasion to observe that the first tobacco-leaves had been pressed together long enough to be mellowed, and that he should like to make a few cigars for himself and Xavier. "I will supply you both for a fortnight," I answered; "we shall soon have the rains, when you cannot go out to work, and you can then make up the tobacco." He seemed quite satisfied; and, going to the storeroom, I divided a hundred cigars into two parcels, and told him to keep one for himself and give the other to Xavier. This unexpected and welcome present was received with many profound bows from honest Diego.

After breakfast I set to work to arrange the fire-arms and boarding-pikes in our bedroom. There were three muskets and six pikes. I drew the charges from the loaded muskets, and employed myself till dinner-time in cleaning them, after which I placed them, one over the other, horizontally, on wooden pins which I fixed in the wainscot, and immediately above them hung up the ship's spyglass and speaking-trumpet, and flanked the whole with the boarding-pikes, placed erect. No one but my wife knew where I kept the ammunition; but it was at hand if it should be wanted. We thought these precautions proper, though, we hoped, unnecessary. Due caution and circumspection are never amiss. My pistols I always wore ready loaded in my belt.

While I was arranging the arms, my dear Eliza placed the few books we had in order, and on a neighbouring shelf displayed the shells we had collected, from the noble conch, the monarch of them all, employed for a bugle, down to the rice-shells, whose extreme smallness and beautiful translucency elicited from my beloved the exclamation, "What would you not give for these, Queen Mab?" They were, indeed, like fabled things of fairy-land. The noble Shakspeare was among our books, but the incomparably nobler Bible was there also: we had likewise Archbishop Tillotson's works, and the Spectator, and Bunyan's Pilgrim's Progress, and one book more, that afforded us never-failing pastime—I mean the Arabian Nights' Entertainments, in which there is, throughout, much more than floats on the surface of the story. A fable is a foolish thing if we do not comprehend the allegory; but that being taken in with it, no mode of writing can be more delightful and instructive.

Diego was very industrious, and in nine days had finished his job: but there was no rest for him yet. We had been made sensible of the danger of fire near our wooden habitations, in a loose and uncovered

state. I therefore directed him to quarry some stones with the iron crowbar, and place them in the rear of the open space, under the rock, behind his and Xavier's houses, to be employed in building a safe kitchen. By the end of the week the fowl-house was erected, but it still required the labour of both men for several days to cut the stakes and wattlings for the stoccado, and put them down. On Tuesday, the 24th, the whole was accomplished, and we transferred thither a colony of our ducks and fowls, twelve of either sort, clipping a wing of each bird to prevent their flying over. The goats also, and the two tame pigeons, we put into the same place; but most of the poultry were left behind at their old quarters.

The next day would be the anniversary of our landing on the island, and we informed our friends of it; but that it was also the birthday of our Saviour Christ, through whose mercy we and they were preserved alive, and we must keep it as a Sabbath, with this difference, that they might dress a feast to commemorate the day, for it was a day of rejoicing to the whole human race. I therefore directed Rota to roast for the occasion a couple of young fat ducks, make a pepperpot, bake some flour cakes, and to take such vegetables and fruits as she might choose, to complete their entertainment.

We were greatly moved by the recollection of our deliverance from shipwreck, and by the near approach of a day which so affectingly brought up in our memories the dear friends we had left behind in England, and who were probably now sorrowing for us, though safe and happy. The sensations thus excited were too much for us, and it was only in long and fervent prayer that our souls found peace. Soothed by the Spirit of our heavenly Father, we retired to our chamber and our cot, where tranquil and refreshing sleep awaited us.

Wednesday, 25th. After breakfast we assembled

in our best attire in the great hall, and, having sung a hymn appropriate to the day, read such parts of the morning service as bore more particularly on it, together with the lessons. The people were much interested, and inquired about many things which we were unable to explain to them, from their yet scanty knowledge of our language: I endeavoured, however, to make them comprehend that Jesus came into the world for the purpose of teaching men the will of his Almighty Father, the pure and merciful God; and, by the sacrifice of himself, to make atonement for the sins of repentant transgressors, who "groan in spirit" to be relieved from the corrupt propensities of fallen human nature.

After divine service, Rota served up for her friends an excellent dinner, and my dear wife furnished them with coffee and sugar liberally. Our own dinner was but a chicken and some coccos. Poor Rota had roasted herself sufficiently, we thought, without imposing on her anything more for us than what appeared really necessary; but after dinner we sat over our fruit, enjoying far more happiness than the world's gayeties could ever impart.

At sunset our people came and ranged themselves about the great door, where they sang, two sometimes dancing, and sometimes all. When they had sufficiently gratified themselves in this way, they advanced to take their leave: my dear wife gave to each one a large coloured cotton handkerchief, which they received with many demonstrations of gratitude, and then said "Good-night."

The three following days the men worked diligently at the stone kitchen, but, being unaccustomed to masonry, their progress was much slower than they had anticipated.

Sunday, 29th. We kept the Sabbath with all due religious observances, and towards evening we indulged ourselves in a pleasant contemplative walk.

Monday, 30th. Xavier and Diego continued to work on the stone kitchen, and by Wednesday it was completed. The walls were built pretty high, entirely of stone, and the cooking places within were of the same material; at the two ends of the interior the ground was planked over, but a space of about four feet in the centre was left open. I was glad this job was finished, as we looked every day for the breaking up of the fine weather: it still continued, however, and on Thursday and Friday the men amused themselves by making excursions in the canoe. On the first day they circumnavigated the western island, bringing back with them some calabashes, several fine conchs containing their fish, and many other shells in a living state. My dear wife was much pleased with being able to add some fine specimens to her former collection from these fresh acquisitions; for shells lose their beauty after being long deserted by their living occupants, and rolled about by the wind and sea. On Friday the men visited the rocks and islands to the northeast, where the brig had struck, and succeeded in taking three fine turtle, which they brought home, and placed in the enclosure prepared for this purpose. We devoted Saturday to sundry domestic purposes. It was now the usual afternoon's pastime with Eliza and myself to repair to the plank house for an hour, feed our poultry there, and then visit the quarter-deck of our vessel—a spot that awakened many painful, but also many pleasing and grateful recollections.

Sunday, 5th January, 1735. Kept the early part of this Sabbath-day, as usual, by the performance of divine service, and by reading and explaining to our friends such parts of the Gospel as they might be able to comprehend. Towards evening the sky became overcast, and this was suddenly followed by torrents of rain, alternating with heavy gusts of wind from the north and northwest. We had anti-

culated bad weather for some days, and taken the precaution to haul up the canoe and punt upon the beach. The wind blew a hurricane the whole night, and shook our habitation so that my dear wife sometimes thought it must be overturned; indeed, but for the skill exercised by Xavier in its construction, it could not have stood. He had given it a solid foundation of timber: three logs under the front, three under the back, and seven crosswise, to which the flooring was fastened by treenails. All the windows were made to close with sliding shutters, like shop windows, so that they could be entirely or partially open, or quite closed; and during a hurricane the safety of a house mainly depends on keeping out the wind. The doors were each of four pieces, folding back or forward, with a wooden bar fastening inside; so that, when shut, the gale was completely excluded. Still our terrors were great, and we rose from our bed, and I struck a light: we went into the great hall to see how it fared with Mira; but she was reckless of the storm, and slept soundly. "Happy creature!" said my dear wife; "thou knowest not what anxiety means!" Towards morning the wind abated, and we found some repose on retiring to our cot.

A little before daybreak I thought I heard the firing of guns. I instantly got up, and sent the men to the summit of the promontory to look out. They quickly returned with information that there was a vessel in distress, and they believed on a reef in the offing. I hastened back with them to the heights, and, taking the glass, saw a brig-schooner steering away to the southwest. No doubt she had been aground, but had got off. We watched her for a couple of hours until nearly out of sight. My gentle Eliza was much moved by the recital on my return; and, without expressing a single regret, so natural on such an occasion, that our hopes of deliverance, suddenly excited, were as suddenly blasted,

she thanked God that the vessel had escaped, and was proceeding safely on her way. The rains, with occasional gusts of wind from every quarter of the compass, continued at intervals for nine days, but subsided entirely on Tuesday, the 14th.

The circumstance of the vessel in distress suggested the idea of erecting a flagstaff on the promontory, on which I might hoist the brig's ensign should occasion require, and I set about putting it in execution immediately. With some trouble we unshipped the foretopgallant-mast of the brig, which was already struck, and before night got it to the summit of the promontory. On Wednesday morning we fitted a truck and halliards to it, and with the crowbar excavated a hole in the rocky ground to receive it. After fixing the mast in its place as firmly as we could, we built the base round with stones to steady it, and finished the job before sunset. On Thursday we were all on foot by the gray of the morning, taking the ensign with us; and, as the sun rose, I hoisted the English colours, and gave three cheers, crying, "King George and England forever!" feeling that, by this act, I had taken sovereign possession of the island for our gracious king. We left the flag flying during the day, and the men and I ascended the hill again with a tarpawling bag, in which we cased the colours after lowering them at the going down of the sun.

On my return home my dear wife regaled me with coffee and a cigar, while I expatiated, somewhat extravagantly, perhaps, on the consequences of the step I had taken. Indeed, we were ignorant not only of whose dominions we were in, but even of the name of the spot where we were; for its position, so far as we had been able to ascertain it, did not exactly answer to any island or islands laid down in the chart I had found in the captain's chest. It was certain that these islands were extremely *dangerous of approach* on all sides, to a very great

distance seaward ; so that mariners, aware, perhaps, of the rocks and shoals lying in this direction, might have studied to give them a wide berth, and thus the spot might have remained undiscovered and unappropriated.

Friday, 17th. Diego this day put the two women in requisition to assist him in the field, while Xavier began to construct a storehouse for our provisions, at a little distance from the southwest end of our dwelling-house. This cost him a great deal of labour, as it was regularly built with boards, and shingled over, so that it was not completed before the 11th of February. By this time the plantation work also was nearly finished, although conducted on a much more extended scale than before ; for not only was all the good ground between our mansion and the woodland region now cultivated, but also the fertile spots between the spring and the rock.

There yet remained much of our former harvest in store. Our fowls and ducks had multiplied, and our young goats had kidded. The wild bananas, put in near the spring, had attained their full growth ; the sugarcanes and pines had thrown out many offsets, which had been transplanted, and both the one and the other were approaching maturity. Diego had made cigars from his tobacco during the rains, and from time to time he brought me an offering of some. The bad weather had given occasion, also, to a new species of domestic industry—the platting of strips of the cabbage-palm leaf into a long, narrow braid, called *sinnetto*, which the women sewed together and made hats of ; rather rude in shape, but light in texture, giving an earnest of something better at a future day. In short, peace, harmony, abundance, and the promise of good things to come were all ours, and it remained only to keep alive in our hearts an habitual thankfulness to the bountiful Giver of so many blessings.

CHAPTER XI.

WEDNESDAY, 12th February. While at breakfast I heard distinctly the sound of cannon, and hastened with Eliza, all the group following us, to the summit of the promontory. We saw a brig and a schooner in the offing, the former firing at the latter, which seemed much embarrassed by the shoals and reefs in seeking to escape from her enemy. I could discern Spanish colours flying at the brig's peak, but the schooner showed none. I immediately hoisted our ensign, and in a few minutes the schooner showed English colours at her foretopmast-head, at the same time shaping her course for the promontory. The brig followed her, firing a bow gun every now and then. I did not hesitate: leaving my wife and the women near our flagstaff, I hastened with the men back to the house, and, taking down the muskets and pikes, and the ship's trumpet, got out a bundle of ball-cartridges, and throwing some provisions that were at hand into a basket, and making one of my companions fill the canteen with water, we returned to the height with as much speed as possible. By the time we reached the summit, we saw the schooner entering the passage between the promontory and the opposite island. I instantly loaded one of the muskets, and at this moment the brig, which was not above half a mile astern of her, fired another shot. I immediately returned it, and was delighted to see the brig heave to. I then hailed the schooner to luff round the headland, and anchor about two cables' length from the house in the bay. To this they answered, "Ay! ay!" The brig again bore up for the passage: I instantly fired another shot, and *then another*, but she still kept her course. I then

thought a volley might be more efficacious (if three muskets fired together may be so called), for the business had become exceedingly serious, and the poor negroes were almost frightened to death at the sight of the Spanish flag so near them. I therefore loaded the three muskets with all possible haste, and, advancing close to the brink of the promontory, we gave her the contents upon her deck, the effect of which I did not know, farther than that she immediately hauled her wind, and stood out to sea for five or six miles, and again hove to.

On observing this, I requested my dear wife to remain by the flagstaff with the women until I should send for her or return to her. She readily acquiesced; and I farther desired that she would give me notice if she saw the brig standing in again. I now hastened to the shore, and, embarking in the canoe, rowed out to the schooner, which had anchored off the woodland region. I jumped on board, with my pistols in my belt, and was greeted heartily by the captain and his crew. "If it had not been for your men on the height," said he, "we should have been taken by yon *guarda-costa*; but they gave him a dose, I guess, and he is off. What island is this?" he continued; "I did not know that our nation had a garrison on any of these places." "I am happy to see you here in safety, friend," I replied; "but have you neither cannon nor musketry?" "None," he answered. "Then I hope," said I, "that we shall see the *guarda-costa* no more, for you have all my garrison before you; and as to the name of the island, I know no more what it is than yourself; your business now, however, is to land, and leave your vessel to her fate. If the *guarda-costa* should persist in coming in, he cannot but succeed in taking her; but if he should attempt to take both you and us, we will try our best against him." The captain and crew were altogether six in number. They *hastily got their boat out, and accompanied us on*

shore, when they proceeded with me directly to the height, where my dear wife received them with her usual courtesy.

We had soon the satisfaction to see the Spaniard increasing his distance ; so, leaving Xavier and his wife to keep watch, I descended with the rest of the party to the beach, where I desired the captain to warp his vessel as close in as possible, and afterward give me the pleasure of his company at dinner. He readily did as I requested, moving her into the little bay below the cotton-tree, and disembarking in time to partake of our family meal. Rota, however, made rather a feast of it, in honour, I suppose, of our guest, presenting us with a dish of salt pork and pumpkin, to which she added a brace of mullet and a roast chicken. A decanter of Canary was placed at my elbow. A table laid out with all the articles of European equipment, and served with such prime food, and capital wine too, in so out-of-the-way a place, evidently caused much surprise in the captain, who looked at everything out of the corner of his eye. I hoped he did not see the empty box I sat on for a chair, the guest and the lady occupying the only two I had. However, he neither made remarks nor asked questions, but ate his dinner, saying a few words now and then on his late narrow escape ; and, when dinner was finished, he told us his story.

He belonged to Norfolk, he said, in Virginia, and sailed for Santa Martha on the Spanish Main, taking Cape St. Nicholas Mole, in St. Domingo, on his way. He had taken on board flour and some English manufactures at Norfolk, and picked up half a dozen slaves from a slave-ship at the Cape. His merchandise he sold for cacao at Santa Martha, where he also received nearly two thousand dollars for his slaves. A few days after leaving that place he fell in with the guarda-costa, which chased him a day and a night, and had run him on a reef just as we

hoisted our colours. He then expected every moment to be taken, and was about to throw the dollars overboard (the only part of the cargo that could condemn him), when the vessel beat over the reef, but, he feared, with the loss of her false keel; thus by good luck, as he expressed it, escaping shipwreck, and from capture afterward by our well-timed fire. He intended to return through the Gulf of Florida; but, as the schooner had been leaking since she struck, he should be afraid to put to sea until he ascertained her condition. I made but few remarks on his story, and reserved all detail respecting ourselves until I should know a little more of him and of what he meant to do. After we had sat about an hour, I called Diego, and told the captain it might be well for him to go with this man to the heights and reconnoitre the brig, after which I should be glad to see him back to coffee and a cigar.

During his absence my dear wife and I took our new position into serious consideration. It was possible the Spaniard might return with the seabreeze next morning, and destroy everything belonging to us; but we put our trust in God, and thus set that matter at rest. We then deliberated whether we should embark in this schooner, with our money, if she were found seaworthy, and discussed many other matters, on all of which we came to conditional conclusions. About five o'clock the captain returned, with Xavier and his wife, Diego having been ordered to remain on the height, to strike the colours at sunset, and to fire a musket if the brig should be then in sight. Our guest reported that the brig was still lying to, about six miles off, and probably, he thought, might stand in again with the seabreeze. "Would you yourself venture to do so, captain," said I, "not knowing but you might thus run into a trap? He will not dare do it," I continued, "you may rely on it, without a previous examination; but during the night he cannot stir,

and in the morning we shall see what will be his movements. After coffee, bring your dollars on shore, and hide them in the sand, where you can put your hand on them: there is nothing better than caution. If you should lose the schooner, you will thus save your money; and if he should burn our houses, we shall, at least, be as well off as you, for we are not penniless; but I will defy him, with all his crew, to attack our persons with success, if we are driven to fight him from the heights: so that, if the worst come, we shall save our lives and our money, and our liberty too; for these much-valued negroes that surround me are free as I am, and I would rather risk my life for the preservation of their freedom than for my own wealth."

Much of my conversation was to him a riddle: but he had something else to think of just then than the disentangling of riddles. After the return of Diego, who had fired his musket when he hauled down the colours, the captain proposed to wish us "good-night," that all might now retire to rest, and be up early in the morning to keep an eye on the brig. "That won't do, captain," said I; "we must watch all night. Two of your men shall go with mine, armed with a couple of muskets and four boarding-pikes, and row guard at the back of the promontory, lest the enemy should send in his boat to reconnoitre, and, finding no one on the alert, surprise us." The captain consented to my proposition, and sent two men on shore, and, having conferred with Diego and Xavier, they readily consented to go with them in the canoe and keep a lookout. I furnished the party, as I had proposed, with boarding-pikes and firearms, not forgetting a supply of ball-cartridges; and I directed them to take with them some food and the canteen. Being thus equipped, they put off in the canoe, which was a fine boat to row guard with.

We could not think of sleeping, and the women

remained with us in the great hall, some provisions and a calabash of water being in readiness to take to the height, should we be driven to the extremity of retiring thither. About midnight we heard the report of muskets, which alarmed us not a little, so that we went out on the open ground before the house, where the captain and his remaining four men soon joined us, they having pulled off from the schooner in their boat the moment they heard the firing. I had two pikes left and one musket, and my pistols, which I quickly mustered together, with half a dozen good felling-axes; and gently whispering my wife to stay with the women, I hastened with the captain and his men, followed by her prayers for my safety, to the boat, and, desiring them to row as quickly as possible to the assistance of the canoe, they obeyed without a word. We pulled lustily round the point, the firing being still kept up by a shot now and then. We soon joined the canoe, and saw the Spanish boat about a cable's length outside of her: they were both lying on their oars, exchanging a shot now and then at each other. On our coming up to the canoe, I was glad to find none in her wounded; and the two sailors, all alert, cried out to me, "We want to board them, but your people won't lay us alongside." "We will do it now," said I. "Give way, my lads! but don't fire a shot till we are within boat-hook's length of her; then we will board and carry her." We instantly pulled out abreast, and I ordered the canoe not to go ahead of us. The Spaniard kept on his oars a while, then gave us a few shots and pulled away. At first he seemed to go from us, but from some cause or other we soon gained on him, and presently were close to him; for he had stopped to load and fire, but, thank God, without effect, for not one of our men was hit. We were just about to return the compliment and board, when they cried for quarter, and we rowed up alongside, desiring the canoe, mean-

while, to keep a few yards off, with muskets cocked. There were six sailors, an officer, and two soldiers in their boat. The officer gave up his sword, and we took the muskets and bayonets from the soldiers, also six other muskets which had been put into the boat for the crew, and all their ammunition. Having effected this, I told our prisoners, in an imperious tone, that they might now return to their ship, but must beware how they fell into our hands again on such an errand; adding that, as it was, I hardly knew how to excuse their conduct in firing on an English vessel in sight of the English flag, when the two nations were at peace! I had scarcely done speaking, when two of the crew exclaimed, "Massa, take we." "Who are you?" I replied. "Sailor negers, sir; we 'Mujians, sir: they take we, sir, and put we in boat, 'cause we row well, sir." "You come into my boat then, and tell them to go, and never come near this place again," said I. "Yes, massa," was the answer, as the two black fellows jumped joyously in by my side; but they spoke too little Spanish to repeat what I had desired. I had forgot that I had an interpreter at hand, till Diego shouted forth very distinctly some words in his sort of Spanish, which perhaps conveyed the meaning of all I wished to say pretty accurately; for the Spanish officer replied that "the schooner was a smuggler, and his commander had a right to take her." This Diego interpreted: to which I made him reply, "Within the limits of your own shore, but not under the flag of an English garrison." "I think," said the officer, "our captain will be sorry for the affair." "Very well!" I replied; "so he ought to be: Good-night;" and I instantly gave orders to row towards the shore, the Spanish boat taking the opposite direction.

The anxiety of my beloved wife now crossed my mind. I therefore called the canoe alongside, made the two sailors in 'er take my place in the boat, and

stepping into theirs, we sprang forward like an arrow. The moment I perceived my Eliza standing on the shore, I cried out with all my might, "All's well!" to which she replied by repeating the same words. Almost in an instant I was on the beach, and she ran forward to meet me. As soon as she could raise her head from my breast, and the power of speech returned, her first question was, "Is any one killed?" "No, love!" "Is any one hurt?" "Not one!" "Blessed be God," she replied, "that blood has not been spilled, even in our own defence!" She took my arm, and silently, with full hearts, we walked up to the house. A candle was burning on the table when we entered. "What have you got there, Edward?" she asked, a little flush passing over her cheek. "The officer's sword," I replied: "we disarmed them, and sent them back to their ship." "That was right," she exclaimed; "that was as it should be." While we were thus conversing, Diego and Xavier were exciting scarcely less vivid emotions in their female auditory; and, interested as I was in the feelings of my dear wife, my attention was irresistibly drawn aside, at times, by the ridiculous gesticulations of Diego, and his ludicrous manner of mixing Spanish and English together in his recital. In a short time the captain and his six men, together with the two negro captives, arrived, bringing with them our own weapons and eight Spanish muskets. I directed them all to come in, and, as there were no seats for the men, requested them to sit on the floor. Rota was ordered to place before them the provisions which had been collected for our retreat to the promontory, and, after they all were refreshed, the captain's crew were sent on board, taking the two Bermudians with them for the night. The captain and myself now took some refreshment, and by the time we had finished the day began to dawn. "Up, Diego," said I, "and be ready to hoist our colours and fire a musket at sunrise: the Span-

iard must see we are not asleep." Diego had not a little of what the French call "*l'esprit de corps*:" in a moment he caught up the musket, examined it to see if all was right, and set off for the flagstaff. Exactly as the sun rose he discharged his piece; and as he hoisted the ensign, perhaps, stout-hearted as he was, he wished a safe voyage to our enemy, hoping to see him no more.

In about an hour he returned to us. "Well, Diego," said I, "is the Spaniard gone?" "No, sir," he replied; "no gone—sail all up—wait for seabreeze." "I reckon that is just the case," observed the captain; "and now, if you please, I will go on board and turn in." To this I assented; and, as soon as he was gone, made my wife lie down in the cot, while I piled up the arms in our own room, and disposed of the ammunition. She entreated me to take some rest; but that, at present, I told her was impossible: I could not sleep till the enemy was fairly off. I therefore directed Xavier and his wife to go up to the flagstaff, and sleep turn and turn about, so as to keep a sufficient lookout for the brig. They cheerfully obeyed; and I made Diego retire to his hut and lie down, his wife and daughter being both fast asleep on the floor in one corner of the hall. After this I went softly into our bedroom, to sit down quietly near my dear wife, and turn over many important matters in my mind; but she was awake, and said, "You need not tread so softly, dear Edward; I am not asleep. How happy I am that you rescued those two poor Bermudian negroes from the Spaniard! I suppose he would have sold them in the end." "Very likely, dear," I replied; "I also rejoice that they are here, for they will add strength to our little colony whether we go or stay." "That, too, is a good thing," she rejoined; "for what a dreadful thing it would be for our poor negro friends here again to fall into the hands of their old masters!"

In this way we talked until the morning was con-

siderably advanced, for Eliza could not close her eyes, so awake was her spirit; and for me, it only remained to seek refreshment in a good bath and a change of linen. Rota and her daughter were now roused from their slumbers, and set about cleaning the hall and preparing breakfast. By this time Xavier and his wife returned from the flagstaff, bringing with them intelligence that the seabreeze had reached the guarda-costa, and that she was going from us with all sail set. We were, therefore, now at rest.

Diego next made his appearance: he looked a little queer, from the fatigue and anxiety of the preceding day. I told him to go and bathe in the sea, change his clothes, and invite the captain to come on shore to breakfast, and also bring the Bermudians with him. He smiled at the idea of bathing and changing his clothes, but went away with his usual good-humour to do as I had bidden him. In half an hour the captain joined us at breakfast—a repast that would not have disgraced a Scotsman's board—flour-cakes and butter, plenty of eggs, fish, and coffee. The two Bermuda negroes stood in the hall by the door, and in reply to my question if they were married, they answered "No, sir," and laughed. I then asked them as to their capture by the Spaniard. They said that they belonged to Master Eliab Tucker, of Bermuda, and were taken in a schooner of his on the Spanish Main some months ago; that their captain and his mate were now in prison at Carthage, but all the crew, consisting of negroes, had been sold except themselves, who were put on board the guarda-costa, from their being thought good sailors, and behaving themselves quietly and obediently. "But," continued one of them, "I tank God, massa, we got away: tem Paniards bad fellers, sir." "Well, never mind what *they* are: *you* strive to be good, and that will show you really do thank God for your deliverance. I do not feel," added I, "that it

is my duty to send you back to your master at Bermuda, but if you desire to return to him, I will endeavour to provide you with an opportunity. If you do not choose to go back, I think you are now under no obligation to do so, for you are free men. When the Spaniard took you, Mr. Tucker lost his right over you; and now that I have taken you from the Spaniard, I freely give up any right I may have acquired in you. I therefore do not hesitate to tell you that you are free, but I will not venture to tell you that the laws of Bermuda may not speak otherwise. So, if you should go back to that island, do not be surprised if the authorities there should give no heed to any manumission I might give you." They understood me perfectly, and thanked me over and over again, saying they would do anything I desired. "Very well," said I, "we will talk over the matter by-and-by." I now called Diego, and told him to take care of the men, and treat them well, and that, for the present, they must live with him and Xavier. "What are your names?" said I, addressing myself again to the Bermudians. "Jack Martin, sir," answered one, and "Jemmy Purdy" the other. "Oh, you are Christians, then, I presume," I replied. "Oh, yes, massa, you see we have two name." "Were you ever baptized?" said I. "No, sir," answered Jack Martin; "we no more Christian except have two name." "Oh, very well," I rejoined; "go with Diego, and we will talk more on this another day." They made some very low bows, to the great amusement of Diego, who was himself no mean proficient in that art, and retired. Jack Martin was a tall young man, with fine features, approaching to the European, but his skin was black as jet: Jemmy Purdy was rather short and ugly, but seemed very good tempered.

After they were gone I turned to the captain, and asked what his plans were now the coast was clear. "I am bound for the Chesapeake," he re-

plied; "but the schooner leaks so bad, I cannot venture to put to sea without looking at her bottom, and to do that we must heave her down." "You shall not want assistance," I replied; "look out for a place that will suit your purpose, and let me know."

After breakfast he went along the beach in his boat, and in about an hour returned, telling me he thought the best place would be the southern side of the rocky point, near the run of water. "Very well," said I, "set about the work at daylight tomorrow morning; and, meanwhile, lend me a couple of your hands, to assist in transferring some casks of provisions from a dwelling-house to a store that we have just finished." "I may do that," he replied, "for the other four men can keep the schooner dry." Diego was now ordered to remove all the barrels from his house to the store, which he said he could soon do, with the assistance of the two sailors from the schooner and the two Bermudians. Leaving him at his work, I directed Xavier to keep in attendance on me; and then, giving my wife my arm, and accompanied by the captain, we walked through the woodland region to the plank house. "This place," said I, "captain, will do to stow your cargo in: what is it?" "Nothing but cacao in bags," he replied. "Well," said I, "what this house won't hold, you must cover over on the beach with a sail."

I was occupied in making some arrangements for the better security of our livestock during the remainder of the forenoon, and about two o'clock we returned to the plank house and dined.

Before sunset the provision casks were all removed to the storehouse, from Diego's dwelling, which he gave up in the most courteous manner to the crew of the schooner, merely remarking that he hoped, as I had been so kind to them, they would behave themselves well. The captain said he would

answer for that. "And so will I too," I added; "for it shall be my business to make such arrangements as will prevent them from conducting themselves improperly, at least towards us."

Friday, 14th. The schooner was hauled alongside the rock, and the people commenced unloading. I sent for the captain to breakfast, during which he asked me to assist him with my people. I told him they were all free, but I would speak to them on the subject, and, if they helped him, he must settle with them at the same rate he would pay for labour at Norfolk. To this, after some hesitation, he agreed. "As far as depends on myself, captain," said I, "you and your men shall receive all possible aid and hospitality." The two negro houses, indeed, were given up, the one to the captain, the other to the crew, while the plantation shed was fitted up for my own men, and the women slept in the great hall. I consulted Diego and Xavier in regard to this arrangement, and they cheerfully concurred in it. A good deal of the cargo was got out, and carried to the plank house the next day, and meanwhile the women made preparations for the Sabbath.

Sunday, 16th. In conversing with the captain the preceding evening, I found that he intended to continue his work on the Sabbath; but on this, after pointing out its impropriety, I put my decided negative.

At ten o'clock every one was summoned to prayers, which we endeavoured to make as impressive as possible; but there was little attention and no devotion, except on the part of our old negro friends.

At noon a good dinner was given to all hands, and at one the captain came and dined with us. After dinner he strolled about, while my dear wife and I remained within, reading the Bible; but in a little time he came back for his coffee and cigar. I cannot say we were either much entertained or edified by his conversation: he spoke of the blacks as if *they were merely beasts of burden.*

While we were talking, Diego was treating the schooner's crew to some of his cigars; but, unluckily, the captain had allowed his men to bring rum on shore, without saying anything to me about it: consequently, they became very noisy, and their sable host broke up the entertainment, and came to me with a report of the state they were in. I was greatly displeased, and on the instant rebuked Diego for allowing rum to be introduced among them, requesting the captain, at the same time, never to give them one drop beyond their allowance as long as they remained here, for intoxicated men were not to be governed. "I guess 'tis no rum of mine," he replied, "but some of their own stuff, that they have no other chance to drink but in harbour on Sundays." I could not restrain my indignation at this reply, and said to him with warmth, "No one shall drink rum here on Sundays, sir! I tell you that." He offered a sort of apology, amounting to little more than that the rum was not his, which I could have believed without his making so much ado to substantiate it. After this he soon took his leave; and, in truth, my dear wife and myself were so heartily sick of these strangers, that we wished them gone, and safely anchored in the waters of the Chesapeake.

In the course of the ensuing week the schooner was hove down. Part of the false keel was found gone, and a plank in the bottom had been pierced through by the rocks on which she had struck. The captain came to me in great distress at these disasters, for he had neither carpenter nor carpenter's tools on board. "The condition of your vessel," said I, somewhat austerely, "would be likely to detain you here longer than the observance of the Sabbath, were you left to your own resources; but all shall be done for you that you may require; and I hope, should you be here another Sunday, I shall see no more of any disposition to violate it." He seemed to be rather

ashamed of himself, if I did not mistake the feeling his embarrassment expressed. I now sent for Xavier, and desired him to take a couple of felling-axes, and go with the captain in his boat to some place most likely to afford long, straight, hard trees, suitable for a false keel; to take his measure before he went, and bring away two or more trees, as might be needed. Xavier immediately proceeded to execute my orders, while I employed myself on board the brig in hunting up some clothes for our two new colonists, in which I was tolerably successful, and in visiting the cave with my dear wife, to see that all was safe there.

The captain made his appearance a little before sunset in high spirits, telling us that he had got two capital sticks, which they had cut on the opposite shore, and hoped he would now soon be ready for sea. "Are you driving for a market," said I, "or is it for a new freight that you are so anxious to proceed on your voyage?" "Why," replied he, "loss of time is loss of money; I am paid by the run out and home, and not so much for freight; the vessel is my own, and every day's delay is time lost to me, which I might employ profitably if the voyage were finished." "Oh! now I understand you," I answered; "I see how it is; and since you have told me that the vessel belongs to yourself, no time shall be lost in repairing her for you. Every assistance shall be given to your men, and I will pay my people for doing it, as perhaps you are not very rich." He replied with some feeling, saying I overpowered him with my generosity; that he had a wife and family; and though, besides the schooner and the two thousand dollars he had with him, he owned a little farm, yet times were hard. He now seemed a little humanized. I dropped the subject for the present, and after he had taken his cigar we wished each other "Good-night."

When he was gone I said to Eliza, "Money is, no

doubt, this man's idol. There will be no difficulty in inducing him to go to Jamaica, if we wish; but I will not start the project to him until his vessel is repaired and reloaded." From this time till the end of the week everything went on orderly, and on Sunday the day was observed by the new-comers with some appearance of devotion.

The false keel being quite ready on Monday, it was fixed in its place the next day; on Wednesday, a new piece of plank that I furnished was put in, and all well caulked and paid before night, and on Thursday they were busy in putting the bags of cocoa on board.

While sitting after dinner, I said to my guest, "How long might it take a good sailing vessel to beat up from this place to Kingston?" "I can't say exactly," he replied; "I guess about three weeks, more or less, as the tradewind might veer." "Well, now, if it is a fair question," I rejoined, "what may you have for the run from Norfolk to Santa Martha and back?" "Why," said he, "six hundred dollars; it should be seven hundred, but then I made more than that by the black fellows I bought at St. Domingo on my way; and I had need, for I shipped two extra hands on their account; four and myself are men enough for the schooner." "Pray," continued I, "what time did you allow yourself for the run, as you call it?" "Why," said he, "three months at the longest; but I sha'n't do it now in that time." "Well, now," said I, "after all this, will you undertake to give me up your cabin for my wife and myself, and some money, to be landed at Kingston, and wait there three days, to see whether I can purchase a small vessel to bring me back here, to save the brig and her cargo? and for this trip I will give you half the amount you would receive for your three months' run." "That would be three hundred and fifty dollars," he replied. "No," said I; "three hundred dollars." "I will think of it," he answered,

"and let you know in the afternoon." He then went away, and returned a little before coffee-time. "I have been thinking over your offer," said he, "and have a mind to take it; but I am afraid it will break my charter-party." My dear wife, who hitherto had preserved silence while he and I were discussing the subject, was now so indignant that she could not refrain from speaking: "You seem to forget," said she, "that the Spaniard would have pretty effectually broken your charter-party, and reduced you and yours to beggary, if my brave and generous husband here had not saved you." After uttering this just reproof, she got up and walked into the adjoining room. The fellow was struck dumb; but, at length recovering himself a little, he stammered out, "Well, I think I ought to run all risks to oblige you; for, as your wife says, it would certainly have been all up with me but for you and your people. So I will undertake to land you at Kingston, with any money you may take in the cabin, on the terms you propose; but we should have a written agreement." "Certainly," said I, "two; one for you and one for me. But now, if I take one of my men with me, what will you charge for his passage?" "I don't know," he answered; "will ten dollars be too much?" "No," I rejoined; "I will pay it if he goes, and ten for a woman, if my wife chooses a female attendant." I now got pen, ink, and paper, and without delay wrote an agreement, which he copied, and we duly signed them both, he taking the one written by me, and I the one written by him.

Soon after coffee the captain took his leave. I instantly made known to Eliza the bargain I had made, and then sent for Diego. He came, and I opened the business to him. He was not a little astonished, but supposed it must all be right, coming from me, and I bade him return at sunrise the next day, and bring Xavier and the two Bermudians with him. When we retired to rest, my dear wife and

myself prayed to be guided by that God who never had forsaken us, and after this turned the matter over, with all its circumstances, in our minds, the continued comfort and security of our adopted family being near to our hearts.

Friday, 28th. We were up at daylight, and dressed, ready to receive our people. We had talked over the subject, and concluded it was best to give Mira in marriage to one of the Bermudians before leaving our little establishment, and I determined on making the proposal at once to the damsel and her parents. When the people arrived, and were standing respectfully before us in the great hall, I told them in a few words that I was going to Jamaica for the purpose of buying a schooner to bring back here, and also to collect a crew for the brig, to refit her; and added that I wished to take one or two of them with me. They all immediately volunteered. "I have concluded to take Diego," I said, "and shall have occasion for only one more; and if you will leave it to me, I will choose." To this they cheerfully assented. I took Diego aside into the storeroom, and requested my wife to call in Rota. "You have heard," I said, "what I am going to do; and I think, Diego, we must take one of our Bermudians with us." "Me tink so, sir," he replied. "Well, then," I resumed, "Mira is a comely young woman, and if she would have no objection to accept one of those clever fellows for a husband, I will marry them before I go, and we will take the other with us, and let him find a wife for himself at Kingston." Diego and Rota both laughed heartily, agreeing at once to the proposal; but my wife desired Rota to bring in Mira, and ask her if she would like either of the Bermudians for a husband. When the question was put to the girl, she courtesied, and said she would rather go with her señora to Jamaica. Eliza thanked her very graciously for this mark of her attachment, but told her it could not be; still, she

must endeavour to make herself happy in knowing her affection was properly estimated, as she would find on her mistress's return. The poor girl cried a good deal, and we left her and her parents together. While they were communing, I told Xavier to make up an account of how many days he and the others had worked on the schooner, and bring it to me after breakfast. By the time I had finished my directions to him, Diego and Rota reappeared in the hall with their daughter, who now looked much abashed. The mother whispered something to my wife, who again whispered to me that Mira had chosen Jack Martin. On hearing this, I got up and called Martin out. I asked him if he would like to settle here, and marry Mira, and live as we lived. "Yes, sir," he replied, "would like it. Me like you, sir; me like the place; me like Mira: her fader and moder very good people, and she very good girl; me be very happy!" "Very well, Martin," said I, "I will marry you on Sunday." We then returned to the hall, the particulars were all agreed upon, and the party retired.

The captain came to breakfast, and when it was over I sent for Purdy and Diego. "Purdy," said I, "if you would like to go with me to Jamaica, and return with me hither, I will take you; and if you should find a freed-woman there that will marry you, I will bring you back together; or if you are not so fortunate, I will buy a wife for you from a slaveship—any one you may choose." "Will go, and come back with you, sir," he replied; "and will do as please God." "That is well said, Purdy," observed my dear Eliza; "I believe thou art a single-hearted, honest fellow." "Tank you, ma'am," said he; "you very good to think black man good." "Well," I added, "this is arranged, then: go; and I shall want you again by-and-by." He made a low bow, and retired. O good-nature and kindness of heart, what blessings do ye impart to your possess-

ots, and to all around them, even when ye are found among those miscalled the outcasts of the human race! I felt happy in thinking I should have this honest fellow with me.

After Purdy withdrew I sent for Xavier, who was ready with his account. He had charged eight dollars for himself, and six for each of the other men, making altogether twenty-six dollars, which I thought very reasonable; and, desiring him to call again with his fellow-workmen, after dinner, I paid them all before the captain, out of some money I had brought from Jamaica. When they were gone, the captain said it was great generosity on my part, and he should never forget it. But, notwithstanding this fine speech, when I told him I intended to take Purdy along with Diego, he discovered no disposition to remit the ten dollars for his extra passenger; and as, fortunately, money was no object to me, I only pitied the man for being so completely its slave.

By Saturday noon the cargo was nearly all on board. I now purchased from the captain three bags of his cacao for a doubloon each, giving one bag to Rota for the use of the people, and locking up the other two in the storeroom of the house. During the afternoon we put on board the hencoops from the brig, with about a dozen young fowls and ducks; also some biscuit, butter, yams, pumpkins, and melons, and a due portion of ground coffee and sugar. All this being done, the captain wished to sail the next morning (Sunday); but to this I would not consent. I told him I had three days given me by the charter-party; that the coming Sabbath should go as one; and that on Monday we would weigh anchor with the first of the seabreeze. He pressed the thing no farther, and it was determined we should sail as I proposed.

In this short interval I had many things to do, and did them. I wrote certificates of freedom for

each person in the island, to be left with them, and gave instructions to Xavier and Rota how everything was to be done during my absence. The Bermudians, meanwhile, brought me the measure of the remaining mast and yards of the brig, to enable me to select suitable spars at Jamaica, to supply the place of those carried away in the storm, as also a complete suit of sails. I left the firearms, pikes, &c., in Xavier's keeping, together with some ammunition, charging him not to use them but for self-preservation, taking only my own pistols and the sword I had received from the Spaniard. Thus by the evening all our arrangements were completed, and nothing remained but the embarkation of ourselves, our cot, trunks, and money.

Sunday, 2d March. We endeavoured to draw all hearts round us this day in prayer, and the strangers seemed more disposed to the exercises of devotion than heretofore. After divine service I solemnized the marriage of Martin and Mira, and strove to impress them with the sanctity of the vows they had reciprocally taken. I had got over my clerical scruples by calling to mind that the law of England recognised any man as a minister who had a congregation; and that justices of the peace, and other public functionaries in our colonies, were considered competent to perform the marriage ceremony: thus there was neither clergyman nor lawyer at the Bay of Honduras, the magistrate being both priest and judge.

I ordered a plentiful dinner for the whole party, and, that we might separate for a while under cheerful impressions, I added coffee and cigars. Having spent the day in a way satisfactory to all, I suggested that they had better retire early to rest, which was instantly complied with. Diego and Rota took up their lodgings in the great hall, as I should want *them* both before daylight. My dear wife and I *closed the Sabbath* with prayer and thanksgiving to

our heavenly Father, entreating him to continue towards us the favour of his divine grace and protection; and now, when we were about to use the riches he had placed in our hands, that he would guide us in all things relating to their appropriation: we had many things to think of, and sat up all the night in conferring about them.

About an hour after midnight we arranged our trunks, and tied up the bag of doubloons in two strong handkerchiefs. This done, I awoke Diego and his wife, and quietly said to them, "You must now go with us to bring my money, for we must place it in the plank house by daylight, ready to be put on board the schooner in the morning." Eliza gave Rota half a dozen candles and the tinder-box, and I had got ready for the occasion some small rope, a hammer and nails, a piece of cane bruised at one end for a brush, and the ink-bottle. Thus equipped, we made our way by moonlight to the thicket, through which we passed into the cave, and struck a light. I immediately commenced taking down the stones from the side, to the great surprise of Diego, but he soon began to assist me. In a few minutes the entrance hole was cleared, and I crept through it into the inner cavern, when Eliza handed me a lighted candle, and then she, with our faithful domestics, immediately followed. I proceeded instantly to nail down the large box, containing the various wrought articles of value, and, soon completing the job, Diego and myself lashed the box round with rope, and I marked it E. S. We then proceeded to cord the thirteen boxes that held the doubloons, which I marked in the same manner, adding their numbers in Roman figures, from I. to XIII. This work occupied us for three hours, and after it was finished we found, from the weight of the boxes, that much additional time would be required to get them out. After a moment's thought, however, I sent Diego for a plank, and by this means we quickly ac-

completed it. When the treasure was all got out, we replaced the stones, and I charged our friends never to mention this recess to any one, as it might again serve some important purpose : they made me a promise of strict silence on the subject.

By daylight we had carried all the boxes to the plank house, the large chest being the least heavy of the whole. "Go, Diego," said I, "and take a hasty leave of your friends: we will stay here till you return; but you, Rota, hurry home and get breakfast for us." Diego soon returned, and I left him in charge of the boxes, with directions not to quit the spot till I sent Xavier to assist him in putting them on board.

Oppressed with care, my dear wife and myself now walked once more through that woodland region where we had so often strayed with joyous and light hearts, with no other companion than our faithful Fidele, and no anxiety but for the growth of our pumpkin and melon beds. Now we were encumbered by riches, and filled with solicitude in regard to those whom Providence had connected with us. As we approached our dwelling, we gazed on the silk-cotton-tree with a sigh, under whose friendly shade we had so often reposed in undisturbed felicity, thinking that possibly we might never repose there again. But the gathering of our people around us awoke us from our revery: we paid our compliments to the newly married couple, and I talked aside with Xavier on many points to which I directed his attention.

While at breakfast the captain came on shore, and we hastened to embark. Xavier lashed up our cot; he and Martin corded the trunks; and then, putting my pistols in my belt, and taking the spy-glass in my hand, with my dear Eliza leaning on my arm and Fidele closely following her, I found myself in a few minutes in the boat. Most of our things were already on board, and we soon reached

the vessel. When we arrived, with our luggage, the captain supposed all was there, as one of the trunks was rather heavy; but I told him the money was yet to be brought. I now sent Xavier and the two Bermudians to Diego at the plank house, to assist him in bringing the boxes on board, with a charge to Rota to remain there till they were all away. I kept the deck, while my dear wife went below to see that the boxes were safely stowed in the cabin; and, when they were all down, I went below myself and counted them, after which I locked the cabin door.

We were now all on deck, and the schooner was hauled out, with our canoe alongside. As we were about to set sail, my wife and I took an affectionate leave of our friends that were to be left behind. The women wept bitterly, while my dear Eliza endeavoured to comfort them by a faithful promise, should it so please God, speedily to return; and, with our parting blessing, we enjoined upon them to keep the Sabbath with all possible holiness. Being now under way, Xavier and Martin were desired to land the women, and then follow us to sea in the canoe until we should haul down our colours. We went out with a fine breeze, and, after rounding the promontory, I requested the captain to proceed under easy sail till we got clear of the reefs and shoals. I took the sketch I had made from my pocket, and carefully noted the landmarks for the channel as we went along, causing the lead to be hove every now and then to mark the soundings. We continued to stand on nearly due south, edging away or hauling up occasionally to avoid a shoal, for nearly three hours, leaving the canoe considerably astern; and, as I saw no occasion to take the poor fellows farther out to sea, we hauled down our colours and they returned, at which time we might have been twelve or fourteen miles from the land, with shoals and breakers extending as far as we could see, both

east and west of us. At twelve o'clock we took an observation, making our latitude $14^{\circ} 20'$ north. About 2 P.M. we had brought the broken water to the westward abaft the beam, the promontory bearing N. $\frac{1}{2}$ E., distant about eight leagues; that height, and the high bluffs of the westernmost island, appearing like two rocks. We now edged away to the westward, and presently brought these two landmarks into one, which I now set at N.N.E. Finding broken water still abaft the beam, we kept away west, and gradually hauled to the wind on the starboard tack, having broken water upon the beam till nearly sunset, by which time we saw nothing but a clear sea all around us. We continued to stand on the same tack the whole night; but about ten o'clock we passed over the tail of a sandbank, where the water broke a little, and on the edge of which there was but three fathoms water. After this escape, we thought it prudent to keep the vessel away a little; but the night being clear, and nothing like broken water to be seen, we again hauled to the wind and stood on till daylight, when we went about on the other tack, and at noon we saw the land again, bearing S.E., distant about seven leagues, with a great deal of intermediate broken water. We stood on towards the land for an hour, when we discovered a hummock in the distance; but the water shoaled, and obliged us to tack. In an hour I requested the captain to go about again, and, as we were working to windward to get up to Jamaica, it was all the same to him, so he stood on the other tack until we brought the distant easternmost hummock to bear south, and then shut it in, by which I was satisfied we were off the north end of the islands, and that the hummock I saw in the distance was our dear promontory. I requested the captain to continue to work to windward by tacks of an hour all the afternoon, to give me an opportunity of taking notes and sketches marking the different

appearances of the land, but before the sun was set we put her head to the northward and took leave of the island.

CHAPTER XII.

It was a peerless night, the azure canopy above us, studded with thousands of stars, appearing transcendently lovely, and during the greater part of it we walked the deck: when, at length, we descended to our cabin, we left the captain in full expectation of being able to fetch the west end of Jamaica without making a tack, if the wind should continue steady.

On the following day the breeze was less favourable, but at the expiration of a week we made the highlands above the Bluefields. From hence we beat to windward, taking advantage of the landbreeze by night, and on the tenth day after taking our departure from the islands, the schooner dropped anchor at Kingston. This was on Wednesday, the 19th day of March.

I lost no time in writing a note to Mr. Dickinson, and despatched Purdy with it: he soon returned with a clerk, who told me that Mr. Dickinson was dead, but that his employer, Mr. Green, who now occupied the premises, had much of Mr. Dickinson's business, and would be happy to do anything for me that I wished. I replied that I had some boxes of money to put in safe-keeping, and that I would thank him to take commodious lodgings for myself, my wife, and two servants, as near to the water as possible, for the better accommodation of business. After receiving his promise to execute my wishes, I sent Purdy with him, and in about an hour they re-

turned. He had taken lodgings for me in King-street, not very far up, and, if I pleased, I might have all the house except one room, which the owner, a brown lady, wished to reserve for herself. The schooner was now hauled to the wharf, and in about an hour all the boxes were landed. When this was done I gave each of the crew a dollar, for which they were very grateful; and I told the captain to call on me before sunset, and I would pay him his freight. The boxes with the treasure, as well as our trunks and cot, were removed to our lodgings with my usual caution; and seeing ourselves, with our faithful little dog and our heavy charge, all together here in safety, we felt thankful to God for his continued protection.

The good woman of the house undertook to provide dinner and everything else we might require, at a moderate charge; and, as there were but three sleeping-rooms besides her own, with a front and back dining-room, I took the whole, not choosing to have any other occupants admitted. The captain came on shore not a great while after, and was exceedingly civil when I paid him his money.

He soon took his leave, hugging the bag of dollars under his left arm, while he shook my hand with the other. My dear wife never felt cordial towards him, and said little at parting except that she hoped he would find his family all well on his return.

We had spent the day at home, and after coffee in the evening were truly happy to retire to our chamber. Our boxes were stowed in the corner of the room, at the foot of the bed; yet our minds were rather uneasy about them, notwithstanding we felt they were in a place of safety.

In the morning we awoke refreshed, and I arranged with my dear wife that she should remain at home to keep an eye on the treasure until I could make some disposition of it.

After breakfast, taking Purdy with me, and leaving Diego to keep guard with his mistress, I called at Mr. Green's store, and found him in. I told him that I wished to purchase a schooner of about a hundred and twenty tons burden, and a variety of things, among which was a mainmast in pieces, with other spars, and a complete suit of sails, for a brig that had been stranded, and that I should want to hire a captain, and a crew of eight men, including the mate; and if he would assist me in these matters, I would pay him his commission, to all which he readily agreed.

After accomplishing thus much, I returned to our lodgings to write a note to the admiral's secretary, which I sent by Purdy, with a person to show him the way. I merely stated in this that I was about shipping a considerable sum of money to England, and wished to be informed if any man-of-war would be soon going, and whether the admiral would order the money to be received on freight. I was soon favoured with a very civil reply, in which it was intimated that there would be such an opportunity in a short time, but that the admiral could not order any sum under ten thousand dollars to be received in charge of any of his majesty's officers: he therefore requested to know what sum I proposed to remit. I sent back a reply by the messenger, stating that, if the ship were a frigate, I would send by her about £40,000; and as it would be all in gold, the captain would suffer little inconvenience from its bulk. In the course of the afternoon a reply was brought, saying that the admiral's secretary and the captain of the *Solebay* would wait on me the next morning. In the evening Mr. Green appeared with a Mr. Rinn, a shipbuilder, and I gave him the dimensions of the mast, spars, sails, &c., and requested he would have them all ready in a fortnight, which he promised should be done.

In the morning, about nine o'clock, the naval gen-

tlemen made their appearance, and in a short time we entered on matters of business. "I understand, sir," said the secretary, "you intend shipping to England about forty thousand pounds in gold. Captain James will sail in about ten days, and I privately communicate to you that he goes to Chatham; so, if you wish the money to proceed to London, the opportunity is a good one." "It will be so, sir," I replied; "and now, gentlemen," said I, "as a merchant, you must pardon my proceeding in this matter like a man of business: what will be the freight?" "One per cent., sir," answered the secretary. "In full of all charges and considerations," said I, in return; "the money being in the captain's keeping until delivered on shore by him, to my order, at Chatham?" "Just so," they replied, smiling; then, after a few minutes' farther conversation, they informed me they would duly let me know on what day the money would be sent for, and that, at the same time, a receipt would be given by Captain James, and memorandums exchanged specifying the conditions mentioned: everything being clearly understood, they withdrew.

I now sat down and wrote a long letter to my uncle at Bristol, relating all that had happened to the brig and crew, and with due gratitude mentioning our own extraordinary preservation; adding that fortune had thrown some money into my hands since our shipwreck, that I had embraced the earliest opportunity to get to Jamaica, where I was now providing a mast, spars, and sails to refit the brig, and that, by the help of some other repairs, and a fresh crew which I meant to take with me, I hoped I should have her at anchor off Balize in about a couple of months, when I would send him a faithful account of all disbursements. My dear Eliza, at the same time, wrote most affectionately to her father and sisters, and to mine.

The next morning I called on Mr. Green, and told

him I wanted to purchase a bill of exchange for one thousand pounds sterling, which I was desirous to remit to London as a deposite. He said he would go with me to the paymaster-general, who would give me a bill, no doubt, but there would be a premium on it of ten per cent. He accordingly accompanied me to the office of this gentleman, with whom I arranged for the bills of exchange, and, as an extra packet was to sail the next day, I begged to have them the same evening: he shortly but civilly answered that I should have them when I was pleased to call with the money. I therefore took my leave of Mr. Green, thanking him for the trouble he had taken, and instantly returned to my dear wife, who assisted me in counting out 300 doubloons from the bag we had placed in the trunk; then turning out the remainder into a stocking, I replaced the 300, and, taking the bag on my arm, went back to the paymaster's office: he calculated the difference of exchange and premium, and then told me the sum to be paid was 4620 dollars. "That is right," I said, "if you take the doubloons at sixteen dollars." "Certainly," he replied, "if not cobbed." I produced my gold, which was the right kind, the cobbed money being unshapely and not milled. I counted him out 289 doubloons, and he returned me four dollars, being the change, and then delivered me a set of bills on the British treasury for 1000*l.* sterling. I asked him what he thought of Perry's house in London to make a deposite with. "None better," he replied; so I took my leave, returning lighter in weight and in heart than I went, for all these operations were attended with much anxiety.

I now lost no time in writing to Perry, Child, and Co., Lombard-street, enclosing them the first of the set of bills, and advising them of a shipment of 12,000 doubloons, to be made in a few days in his majesty's ship Solebay, Captain James; which said 12,000 doubloons would be consigned to their house,

and that they were to receive them from Captain James at Chatham, paying one per cent. for freight ; after which they were to invest the gold to the best advantage in stock, in the name of Edward Seaward, reserving in their hands £1000 as a deposit to my credit. I also requested them to take care of the bank receipts for the money, and to send me their acknowledgment for them, with the accounts, by the first packet, followed by duplicates in the next. This being finished, and the bill of exchange specially endorsed, I read the letter to my dear wife as she stood by me, observing to her, " You perceive, love, I do not order this money to be ensured : I commit it to the waves, to be preserved or otherwise for us, as it may please Him who disposes all events for good to those who seek to serve him." She replied, as she hung on my shoulder to listen to the letter, " My honoured husband, we have but one mind in all things."

It was nearly dinner-time, but I hastened off to post the letters, and returned, heartily glad to change my clothes, and then sit down quietly with my bosom friend to enjoy the ample board that was spread before us.

Sunday, 18th. We dressed ourselves in our Sunday clothes, which we found had not become altogether unfashionable, except my waistcoats, the flaps of which were quite diminutive, and without lace or embroidery, so that I had ordered a couple of genteel vests to be made, one of which I now put on ; and the flaps, being fully in the mode, reached half way down my thigh, with pockets large enough to hold a week's provision. At breakfast I received the acknowledgments of our two attendants in the new attire which I had ordered for them, and in my own opinion they were much more conveniently clad than their master. We desired very much to go to church, but thought it would be imprudent to leave so large a sum of money in a place

so insecure : we therefore determined to have prayers at home, and accordingly read the morning service. Our two men attended, and, by invitation, the brown lady made one of the congregation. Diego was, as usual, truly devout, and Purdy behaved very well ; but our new friend sometimes laughed and sometimes yawned, and seemed heartily glad when our devotions were over. The heart of my dear wife bled at this manifestation of total darkness on the part of the poor woman ; and she said to me, " How happy should I be were I made the honoured instrument of bringing that poor soul to the knowledge of God ! "

About one o'clock Mr. Green called on us. My dear wife expressed her regret that we had not been able to go to church, but hoped we should have that happiness the next Sunday, and concluded by asking how many churches there were in Kingston. He replied, " One, I believe ; but I have never been in it. " " Never been in it ! " repeated Eliza, with an emotion of surprise. " Oh no, " he coolly answered ; " scarcely any one here ever thinks of going to church : we have too much to do, and I have only just shut up the store. " She could scarcely believe her ears ; for on this subject we had made no inquiry, having on our former visit to the island arrived on one Sunday and sailed the next. Mr. Green sat a good while, and I invited him to stop to dinner. We gave him excellent fare, with which he seemed well pleased, but indulged in some light observations on saying grace before dinner, which drew from my dear wife a rebuke that I think he will not soon forget. " It is a common remark, " said she, " Mr. Green, that ingratitude is so base a crime that the man was never yet found who would acknowledge it ; and he who omits thanking the Creator and Giver of all things for the good he receives at his hands, is surely liable to such imputation. This is my apology for that grace before dinner which

you seek to make a subject of ridicule." He was quite confounded, and could make no reply for some time : at last he said there was something pestilential in the very atmosphere of Jamaica, for he was sure that in England he never would have ventured to say what he had. My wife mildly answered that she hoped he would not suffer all his early good habits to be destroyed merely by a change of place. He left us after coffee, with but little regret on our parts, I must say, at his departure.

Monday, 17th. I called on Mr. Green early in the morning on business. He very soon alluded to what my wife had said to him, and declared he felt much obliged to her ; adding, it had made such an impression on his mind, that he thought it would keep him on his guard in future. After he had concluded what he had to say, I told him I wished him to make some inquiry about a Bermudian schooner that was for sale, and if he considered the price reasonable, and she should suit me, I would purchase her. About noon he sent his clerk to tell me that the owner of the vessel was at his counting-house, and if I would go with him I could see her. I accordingly went, and took Diego and Purdy with me. She was a fine vessel, built entirely of cedar, and fully equipped for sea—her measurement one hundred and thirty tons. Returning to Mr. Green's counting-room, I asked the owner his price for her. "Four thousand dollars," he said. "I cannot give anything like that sum," I replied, and went away. He called on me several times during the week, constantly coming down a little, but still asking too much. "What is the most you will give, then?" said he. "Three thousand dollars," I answered, "if the report of a ship-carpenter be satisfactory, and I am content with the inventory." No, he could not take that. But before the week expired he consented to do it, and brought the inventory of what belonged to her. Mr. Finn was sent to examine the vessel, her boats,

sails, cables, &c., &c., and being well satisfied, a conveyance was made out, the register handed over to me, and I paid the three thousand dollars. The vessel now being mine, I told Purdy he must take charge of her, and I shipped two free New-England negroes at five dollars a month.

On Wednesday morning, the 19th inst., Captain James, with the admiral's secretary and the master of the *Solebay*, called upon me, and eight of the boxes were brought out by Diego and myself into the saloon. I sent for a hammer and chisel, with which I soon opened the lids, Diego having quitted the room after they were uncorded. The doubloons were then counted and replaced, the boxes nailed up again, and Diego called in to re-cord them. I now delivered them to Captain James, taking his receipt, and signing a memorandum of agreement, the counterpart of one he had signed and given me. The master went for the boat's crew, who carried away the cases of treasure to the boats in waiting, as lightly as though they had contained only so much ballast. I told the captain the name of the house in London to which the coin was consigned, and that I had written by the packet to advise them of the shipment, but would write again by him, upon which he took his leave.

Towards the end of the week I called on the paymaster of the forces again, and inquired if it would be convenient for him to draw on the treasury for any sum within five thousand pounds; he replied that it was quite convenient, and that I might have a bill for that amount, or any other within it. My answer was that I should prefer taking the whole sum, and would bring the money on Saturday morning. Accordingly, I made Diego carry one of the boxes with me to the paymaster's, where I opened it, and, untying one of the bags, I took out twelve doubloons, saying, "Now in this and the other bags you will find the sum right by giving me eight dol-

lars change." Counting the money and finding it as I told him, the paymaster delivered me bills at thirty days' sight on the treasury for £5000 sterling, and also the eight dollars change, when I took my leave.

I now purchased an iron chest, into which we removed the twelve remaining bags of doubloons, and also the contents of the large box, of which we took a correct inventory, viz. :

Gold — Crucifixes, thirty-six ; sword-handles, twelve ; chains, large and small, forty ; triangular pieces embossed with Scripture figures, having a hole at one angle for a chain, eight.

Silver — Candlesticks, two pairs ; ewers, two ; salvers, four ; crucifixes, fifty ; chains, fifty ; cases with perfume, two ; shoe-buckles, twelve pairs.

Tissue of gold, four pieces ; of silver, six pieces.

This being done, I locked the chest, feeling a great relief in my mind as I put the key in my pocket.

Sunday, 23d. I sent Diego to the schooner for Purdy to accompany us to church, and we left *mammon* in the chest to take care of itself. There were but few there compared with the population of the place, and most of that small number were officers and soldiers. We could not but be affected by this melancholy corroboration of Mr. Green's statement, yet we ventured to hope that a day would come when the Sun of Righteousness would arise on this spiritually benighted land, and both bond and free join in the worship of the God that made them.

Monday, 24th. I desired Purdy to be on the alert to procure a crew for the brig, eight hands, and bring them to me as soon as he should find them. "Yes, sir," he replied, "me get crew for brig, but want to tell you something, sir. You said me have Jamaica wife to go back with. There young woman, sir, will have me ; but if she go, fader and moder, and one broder, all want to go too, sir. I tell

hem, sir, can't marry every one of them." "Well, Purdy," I replied, "bring them all to me—or bring the father and mother, and I will talk to them." "Tank you, sir, tank you very much," said he; and, making several scrapings with each foot, retired.

The next day Mr. Finn brought to me a man who had been mate of a London ship, and whose captain had behaved somewhat brutally towards him. Liking his appearance, and finding he had been at the Bay of Honduras, I engaged him as a captain for the brig, but with an understanding, as his wages would commence immediately, that he was to obey my directions in everything, and for the present take charge of the schooner; adding that he must come to me at nine o'clock every morning for orders, and meanwhile endeavour to procure a crew, taking care not to engage any men of bad character; and I desired him to confer on this subject with Purdy, who was a confidential servant of mine. In the course of a week he had got his crew together, and having received from me a very minute statement of the condition of the brig, he took care that everything should be furnished by Mr. Finn that might be required for her re-equipment.

My dear wife and myself had for some days past made our beloved friends at Awbury the subject of our conversation, and I had resolved that she should send a present of £500 to her father, and I would, at the same time, remit an equal sum to my sisters and brother; and for this purpose I procured two sets of treasury bills, for which I paid, as before, 288 doubloons 12 dollars for the £1000. Eliza's letter was replete with expressions of tender duty to her most excellent parent, and of affection to her sisters. She told them that Providence had bestowed an ample fortune on me, and that, if either of her sisters should marry, and would come to Kingston, and not object to live with us where we lived, I would provide for them. I also wrote to my brother at Aw-

bury, telling him that £100 was for each of my sisters, and £200 for himself; and if he chose to marry, and come to Jamaica with his wife, I would see that their situation was made comfortable; adding that he need not be uneasy about leaving his sisters, as I would allow each of them £50 a year. I desired him to write to me, but observed that he must not be surprised if five or six months should elapse before he received my answer, as my place of residence was some hundred miles from Jamaica, but that a vessel belonging to me would visit Kingston every two or three months on business. Our letters to Awbury, with their enclosures, were now all ready, and another letter to my uncle, informing him how I was getting along with my preparations for refitting the brig; also letters to Perry and Co., with the first of exchange for £5000, ordering them to invest it, and duplicates of my letter by the packet, with the second of exchange for the £1000 remitted by that opportunity.

Purdy and his nuptial friends now waited on me. The father and mother of the girl were both mulattoes. The man said he would give his daughter to Jemmy; but as he had heard from him that I had a good settlement, where I could employ him, and give him a house and grounds, he and his wife and son wished to go too. He told me he was a carpenter, and so was his son; that they had been turned out of a place they had built on some ground that did not belong to the man who sold it to them, and were so impoverished by it that they wished to leave Jamaica altogether. I consented to take them, but it was on condition that the son should bring a wife with him, as my great object was to people the settlement with honest, industrious families. He answered, there would be no difficulty in that, and he could promise for his son. He then departed, to carry the welcome news to his family. Little more was done this week, and on Sunday, the 30th, we

went to church, accompanied by Diego, who now remained entirely at our lodgings, the schooner having the captain, with his crew, on board, besides Purdy and the two New-England negroes we had shipped as part of her complement.

Early in the week a fine new boat was purchased, with lugsails, and measuring twelve tons: she was half-decked, and therefore safe in the open sea. I paid 300 dollars for her. Purdy agreed to take charge of her, with the two negro sailors, and to carry his wife and her father's family down in her, with their baggage. I advanced to his father-in-law, the son, and himself, 20 dollars each, telling him he must ballast with coals, which I should want to burn lime, and that he must take them in, and be in readiness to accompany the schooner, which would certainly sail on the Monday or Tuesday following. I called our boat *The Avon*, after the beautiful river down which Eliza and myself sailed on leaving England: the schooner was called *The Porgy*, the name of a fish much esteemed at Bermuda.

By the middle of the week they began to load the schooner, leaving the spars to be stowed on deck. A few thousand bricks were laid on her floor, and after this there were put on board spare anchors for herself and the *Avon*, and also a long 12 pounder, fitted with a depressing carriage, to mount on the promontory, with nearly a ton of shot for the gun. Then came American flour, rice, biscuit, Irish beef, pork, butter, and a variety of other provisions in barrels; ironware, cotton goods, implements of husbandry, furniture, crockery, &c., &c., &c., besides gunpowder, and several kegs of ball cartridges.

While they were engaged in loading the schooner, I procured a letter of introduction to the governor's secretary at Spanish Town, and, hiring a calash with two horses, we rode over from Kingston on Thursday morning in about an hour and a half. I waited on the secretary, and told him that I under-

stood he gave commissions for island appointments, and that I wanted one as captain-commandant over a place where I was settled with some negroes and free people. It was a small island or two, among some rocks and shoals off the Musquito shore, on which there were no inhabitants when I landed there, about fifteen months before; that we had built some huts, and I was now going back thither with a schooner; that we had prevented a Spaniard, about three months since, from taking a Virginia vessel; and that I had hoisted the English colours, but was afraid to protect them without a commission. The secretary asked me what the island was called. I replied it was not laid down in any chart that I had seen, and that I had therefore called the group "*Seaward Islands*," after my own name. "And what is your Christian name?" he inquired. I answered "Edward." "Well, Captain Edward Seaward," said he, "you shall have the commission, but you must pay twenty doubloons for it." "That is a great sum, sir," I replied, "but I do not demur; you shall have it; and I will thank you to grant me the privilege of appointing any person my lieutenant in the event of my temporary absence." "Oh, certainly," he rejoined; "there can be no objection to that." He then requested me to sit down while he went to arrange the business. He returned in about an hour with the commission, signed by the governor. I read it over, and found it everything I wished. I then counted down the twenty doubloons to the secretary, who wished me a good-morning, and left me without asking another question. I was heartily glad of my success, but could not help thinking I had never seen the commonest mercantile transaction done in a more matter of course manner; and I strongly suspected that the governor, when he put his pen to the commission, knew no more of the nature of the appointment he was signing than he did of the rocks and islands over which

he had unconsciously placed me. However, the important credential was now mine, and my wife rejoiced with me, on my return to the inn, at the quiet manner in which the thing had been accomplished. "Now, Captain Seaward," said she, smiling, and taking my hand, "we will have dinner; and I shall have the honour of drinking your health; and we will then return to Kingston," which we did.

On Friday morning I consulted with Diego and Purdy as to the expediency of purchasing two new negro boys, to form part of the schooner's crew, and who, I thought, with Purdy and Martin, and the two New-England negroes, would be sufficient. They approved of the idea; but I added, "Don't suppose that I will have any slaves at Seaward Islands. I will bind these lads for seven years, and after that they shall be their own masters." "God bless our good master!" my two friends, one after the other, replied. "Dear Eliza," continued I, "would it not be well for you to take three or four girls on the same terms? for our society will be so constituted on our return that you will require them." She cordially acquiesced; and we went all together to the wharf of a merchant who had just disembarked a cargo of these human beings for sale. My wife remained at the counting-house, while I, with my attendants, proceeded to the enclosure where the poor creatures were. Some were young, and some in the prime of life; some gay, and some sad; but all exhibited a sleek, glossy skin, having been rubbed with palm-oil for the occasion, and all their vesture might have been replaced with a fig-leaf. After some scrutiny, my men picked out two nice, clean-limbed lads of about eighteen, and they were led up to the store. The price was £50 currency each, and the bargain was struck. The merchant's clerk was now told that Mrs. Seaward would like to have two or three girls; and that, as she could not

go down into the mart, we would thank him to bring a few up. Half a dozen speedily made their appearance; and my wife was selecting three from the number, when one of the young negroes I had just purchased evinced considerable restlessness and some emotion. Eliza noticed it, and said to me, "I am sure that lad has a wife or sister among these people whom he wishes to go along with him." I bade Diego take him out to see if it were so, by leaving the lad loose, and observing to which one he would run. My dear wife was right: they returned with his sister; and when my wife selected her, which she did at once, the youth fell upon his knees before her, kissing her feet. I was asked £40 currency each for the three girls: the money was paid, and Diego conducted the party to our lodgings, where they were placed in the negro-yard by the brown lady, among her own domestics.

On our return, my wife's first care was to have the girls washed with warm water and soap, and then neatly clothed, while Purdy took the lads on board the schooner to put them through the same operation.

In the afternoon, the captain of the brig called at his usual hour and reported progress. He said he would have everything ready by Saturday night. "Very well," I replied; "but do not hurry; I will not sail on Sunday, and I shall take Monday to collect any things that in the hurry of business may have been forgotten: we will sail, therefore, on Tuesday." "That is very well, sir," he said; "but I would suggest to you that it may be very unwise to send Purdy's family in the Avon. We may want that boat to look out among the shoals and breakers for a passage; and if she should take the ground with those people in her, there will be horrible confusion. You had better send them in the schooner, and put half a dozen good hands in the boat, to jump out and get her off if she should ground, and who

could use the oars to keep her clear of a reef if necessary." I thanked him for his advice, and told him I would follow it. "But," said I, "Finn was to get me a skipper for the schooner, and it is quite time I was suited; still he has not done it." "I know a very good fellow I could recommend," replied the captain: "he is rather young, to be sure, but a nice lad and a prime navigator, and no lubber withal, being born and bred at sea. I will bring him to you to-morrow, if you please." "Do so," said I.

In the morning the captain called on me with his young friend, "Francis Drake." "I like your name and your countenance, sir," said I, "but you are very young." "I am twenty-two," he replied, "and have been at sea all my life. I was born on ship-board; my father was master of a man-of-war; I was a midshipman for some years, but my father being dead, and it being peace, I could not get promotion. I have been on this station and in these seas, in and out of the service, altogether six years; and I think, without flattering myself too much, that I know as much about them as any man now sailing out of Kingston. I would not have said so much," he added, "only a man must say something for himself when he is taken for a brat of a boy." I smiled, and, stretching out my hand, asked his pardon, saying, "I doubt not, Mr. Drake, we shall, in time, be better friends. I will now engage you, if you please, and at the same rate with your friend there, the commander of the brig." He took me at my word, and was forthwith installed captain of the schooner. "Now, gentlemen," I resumed, "sit down, and let us talk matters over." I then acquainted them with the situation of the place to which we were going, its unknown longitude, its complete investment with reefs and shoals, and showed them my sketches of the land, remarks, &c. After some consultation, it was agreed that Captain Drake should go in the Avon, with three of the white seamen belonging to

the brig, and Purdy and the two New-England blacks; while Captain Taylor, of the brig, should navigate the schooner, with his mate and the four other white seamen.

This being settled, I sent Diego for Purdy and his father-in-law, and made known to them our new arrangements. Purdy did not like it much; but his father-in-law, who had just seen the two vessels, was highly pleased; and Purdy was easily reconciled, as his wife would be with her own family. I had still one other object to compass, which was to procure a regular ship-carpenter to go out with me; for, although Xavier was a shrewd fellow, his sufficiency could not be relied on where regular repairs might be wanted. I therefore sent for Mr. Finn, and after desiring him to meet me the next morning at Mr. Green's counting-house with his bill, asked him if he knew of any one who had a good negro ship-carpenter that he would dispose of; and, as an inducement, I would buy the wife and children with him, if there were any. He answered he thought he did, and in the afternoon brought a person to me who was as much disposed to sell as I was to buy; for he was going home, he said—that is, to England. "How old is your carpenter," said I, "and has he any family?" "He is old, sir," was the reply; "I suppose nearly forty: he has no children with him, but has a wife, and she is nearly as old as himself." "I should like to see them," I answered, "before we say anything more about them." He then went for them: they both pleased me, and I purchased them, paying £100 currency for the man, and £40 currency for the woman; after which I called in Allan Derrick and his wife Priscilla, and told them I had bought them; that I was sorry they were not younger, as in seven years I intended to give them their freedom, if they behaved well, and desired it; and, in the mean time, would treat them with the utmost kindness." I then asked Allan if he had any prop-

erty. He replied, "No too much, massa; have pig, goat, few fowls, and few Jilly tings in house." "Well," I said, "you may carry them all with you: Diego will take charge of them; and you shall have a house for yourself and your wife; and whatever you have shall be safe." "Tank you, massa," he said; "me see you good buckara massa." I now told Diego to go home with these two people, and put them in the way of being ready to embark on Monday.

Saturday, 5th. I went immediately after breakfast to Mr. Green's counting house, where I received a statement of the money he had laid out for the cargo, on which I allowed him the usual commission, and paid him. In the course of the morning I settled also with Mr. Finn. After this I waited on the paymaster, to inquire if he had any bills on England: he replied that he had not, but referred me to the victualling agent, to whom he gave me a letter of introduction. This gentleman was glad to see me, as the cash would be very convenient to him; but I complained of the premium, and told him I would not take bills for any considerable amount at anything above five per cent. He answered that all government bills had brought ten for some time back; but, if I would accommodate him with £10,000 sterling, he would let me have the bills for it at five. We accordingly struck the bargain, and on Monday I waited on him with two boxes of doubloons, out of which I counted down 2747 pieces, being the amount required, and receiving eight dollars back. He then handed me over a set of bills on the treasurer of the navy for the £10,000, approved by the admiral, for which I had stipulated as a security for their acceptance.

Sunday, 6th. We kept this Sabbath by attending church, and by suitable private devotions.

Monday, 7th. After all the moneyed arrangements before mentioned, and paying for everything, I found I had still four bags of doubloons untouched, and

about 100 pieces besides from the bags we had last opened. I converted 150 of these into dollars, which I put in bags, and placed them in the iron chest with the gold, reserving as much as I thought would be required for present use. I now wrote letters to Perry and Co., enclosing them my first of exchange for £10,000, with orders to fund the amount; sending them, at the same time, the seconds of the former bills, and also my will, which I endorsed, "Not to be opened but by myself, or in the event of my decease;" and I moreover prepared a duplicate letter, with farther duplicates of the bills already sent, to be forwarded by Mr. Green to Messrs. Perry and Co. at some future opportunity.

Diego now reported all his stock (consisting of six sheep, four pigs, twelve turkeys, twelve geese, twelve Guinea-fowls, also a quantity of plantain suckers and plantains, some roots, and a good supply of fruits) to be safe on board, besides Allan Derrick's pig and goat: he had brought, too, a fine large dog, which he begged permission to take; and, after some hesitation with us on account of our little pet, Fidele, we gave our consent.

Before dinner I visited the vessels, and was highly pleased with their appearance, and all the arrangements that had been made. I paid a month's wages in advance to the captains, and also to each of the men. After dinner my dear Eliza and I busied ourselves with packing up some suitable clothes we had ordered, among which were several pairs of buck and doe skin boots, the colour of our own sandy isthmus, on which we hoped once more soon to tread.

At my fond wife's request, a suit of uniform, blue and gold, with a hat looped and handsomely laced, had been made for the captain-commandant. "If those Spaniards," said she, "should ever intrude themselves into our bay, which they may do as friends, without an imposing uniform they might

pay very little respect to your commission." I appreciated the force of the remark, and, accordingly, the uniform was ordered.

My dear wife, meanwhile, had provided herself with some presents for those we had left behind, and attended to the minutæ essential to our own future comfort, by procuring a variety of things not necessary to be enumerated; and, having finished the day with prayer to our heavenly Father, we rose the next morning in health and spirits.

CHAPTER XIII.

TUESDAY, April 8th. We paid our bill cheerfully to our hostess, the brown lady, thanking her, besides, for her many civilities, and embarked at seven o'clock. All hands cheered us as we came on board, and the women crowded around my wife to kiss her hand. We received our clearance from the custom-house at nine o'clock, and the seabreeze having set in, and the pilot being on board, we set sail. After clearing the port and discharging the pilot we steered nearly south, keeping away about half a point to allow for east variation. At sunset we computed our run from the land to be about eighteen leagues, which was sufficient to take us clear of the Pedro Shoals; therefore we now kept away S.W., and, having run about one hundred miles by the next day at noon, we observed in $15^{\circ} 48' N.$ It was determined still to steer S.W., keeping a good lookout ahead, and at noon on Thursday we found ourselves in $14^{\circ} 46'$, having run little more than eighty miles during the last twenty-four hours, as we had kept the vessel under easy sail all night, and laid by for some hours in the forenoon, until we

could ascertain our latitude, supposing ourselves not to be very far distant from our island. After some consultation, we now agreed to steer west, and by four o'clock breakers were discovered right ahead, in consequence of which we hauled up to the northward, bringing the breakers on our lee beam. We continued to stand to the northward for about an hour, when we were enabled to keep away N. W. At this time something like land was discerned to the southward, but it was too late in the day to venture running in, and we therefore stood off and on all night. At daylight in the morning we again descried land to the southward, and stood in towards it. After reaching the broken water, and then running a few miles on a west course, keeping the surf on the reef about a mile within us, we bore away two points to the southward, and then S. W. A little before noon we set the high land nearest to us, bearing S. E., when the channel appeared open, having a little hummock in the distance, which I knew to be our homestead promontory. We now hauled to the wind on the larboard tack, laying up about S. S. E., and stood in. I was not without apprehension, although I knew there was a navigable channel that separated the two islands to the north, through part of which Diego, who was now at my elbow, had rowed his canoe. Thus assured, I ventured to keep on under easy sail till we found ourselves embayed within a horseshoe reef, and were thus compelled to stand back again to escape from our perilous situation. We then rounded the edge of the reef to the westward, keeping away a little till we brought the hummock in the distance to bear S. S. E. The channel now appearing quite open, but with shoals on each side of it, we stood in again, the Avon leading, but soon found ourselves arrested by a long line of broken water, stretching apparently all the way across. Thus straitened, and at a loss how to proceed, I deemed it expedient to bring

the schooner to an anchor for the present, under a small, low coral island at the eastern extremity of the breakers, and there remain until the Avon should explore the passage. I hailed Mr. Drake to that effect; and, as soon as we dropped anchor, he made sail along the northern edge of the broken water until he rounded its western extremity; then hauling up to the S.E., he entered an open, unobstructed channel, and after standing on, with full sail, for about three miles, he found himself in the harbour which, on my first arrival, I had mistaken for a lake, and which I have so called more than once in this Journal.

Mr. Drake now hoisted his union jack, as had been agreed on, and then put back, standing towards us. As soon as I perceived his signal we got under weigh, and quickly rounding the reef, hauled up to windward of a high rock, and afterward of a low island, which lay midway of the channel, passing between them and the northern end of the main island. Here the Avon met us, and took her station on our weather quarter; and we sailed on together, with a flowing sheet and colours flying, through the strait that separates the two principal islands on the north into the open harbour, where a thousand well-known objects at once burst upon us. Xavier had caught a glimpse of the Avon from the shore when beginning to explore the channel, so that we had scarcely passed the strait when we saw the colours go up on the promontory. In half an hour from this time we brought up in Woodland Bay, with our dear mansion, and our still dearer silk-cotton-tree in full view before us; and, at the same instant that the anchor dropped, Xavier and Martin were alongside in the canoe. They were almost beside themselves: they embraced my knees, they danced about, they hugged old Diego almost to death, and bowed to the señora lower than ever. The boats were quickly hoisted out, and we landed

at once, with Diego and the three negro girls, on the silk-cotton-tree beach, where Rota, with her daughter Mira, and Hachinta, were standing to receive us. My dear wife had scarcely put foot on shore, when they all, with one accord, threw themselves at her feet, embracing her knees; and, as soon as they arose, the new negro girls, thinking they must do the same, prostrated themselves also. But Eliza raised them instantly, saying, "No! no!" She was affectionate herself, and loved every demonstration of it in others; but anything that tended to give worship where it was not due she utterly abhorred.

After this scene my dear wife took my arm, and we felt as we might suppose our first parents would have felt, had they been permitted to return to Paradise after their expulsion. Rota had prepared coffee for us as soon as Xavier reported the appearance of a sail; and the reviving beverage was truly acceptable, for we had passed a most anxious and trying day. I desired that supper might be ready about eight o'clock, and requested Hachinta to cook a plentiful supply. After coffee, our trunks, cot, and iron chest were brought on shore, and I ordered all the people to be landed except the white sailors, who were to take up their quarters in the schooner, while the two New-England blacks were to return to take charge of the Avon, and sleep there. After seeing that their men were properly disposed of and made comfortable, the captains were to come on shore to supper. David Allwood and his family had the plank house allotted to them, and Purdy, being yet unmarried, after passing the evening with them, took up his lodgings on board for the night, with the two young negro boys, who had been permitted to land, and returned with him. Allan Derrick and his wife lodged with Xavier, and Diego went to his own house, where Martin and his wife also lived. The three negro girls were to sleep in the great hall.

Captains Taylor and Drake occupied the cabin of the schooner. These arrangements being made, as soon as we had partaken of our supper we all retired to our respective lodgings, when my dear wife and myself, after closing our door, lifted up our hearts to that God whose mercy and goodness we had equally experienced by land and by sea.

Saturday, 12th. I sent for the captains early in the morning, and told them they must move the schooner within the black rock, there discharge her cargo, and afterward take it up under the promontory close to the plank house; and, to save the formality of often-repeated invitations, I added that I should expect the pleasure of their company at breakfast, dinner, and coffee every day while the bustle of our work was going forward. The Avon, meanwhile, was to be left at anchor, to take care of herself.

My dear wife undertook to superintend all the cooking arrangements, for I found that I should now have a great deal of writing to do, as regular accounts must be kept with each individual in the settlement, and a correct statement of everything I took from the brig for my own use. I therefore set about opening books in a regular way for everything connected with money transactions.

Sunday, 13th. At ten o'clock everybody was in the great hall, dressed in their best, to prayers. We were thirty-two in number; and, looking round upon the assembly, I blessed God for the sight. My dear wife commenced with a hymn, then I read the service, and we concluded with another hymn, and the prayer for grace. Some were devout, some only orderly, but none irreverent or trifling. After service I performed the marriage rite between Cornelia Allwood and Jemmy Purdy, and at one o'clock dinner was spread for all hands under the great tree, on a table of planks raised about a foot from the ground, round which they all sat, squat

fashion, to the great amusement of the white sailors, who partook of their cheer. The afternoon was spent innocently and pleasantly, and at an early hour all retired to their respective quarters, the bride and bridegroom taking up their habitation with her family in the plank house.

On Monday morning every one went manfully to work, so that by Wednesday afternoon the schooner's cargo was all landed, and a temporary covering of planks and boards placed over it.

On Thursday morning we erected shears on board the brig, to hoist out the goods in her hold, so as to get her afloat. They began about midday to take out her cargo, and before evening Captain Taylor thought she began to lift, and proposed bringing one of the schooner's spare anchors and a cable round in the Avon early in the morning, to try to heave her off. This was accordingly done, the anchor carried out astern, and in a short time the brig was got into deep water. Being now fairly afloat, it was necessary to ascertain the state of her bottom. One of the white seamen, therefore, volunteered to dive under her keel, and stripping at the same moment, plunged in. He soon reappeared, and reported a piece of the false keel off forward; but, though he made several of these submarine explorations, he could discover no other injury. I now held a consultation with Captain Taylor, and we concluded, if the brig did not leak much after replacing the cargo, that it would be safe to proceed with her to the Bay of Honduras, without delaying to make farther repairs at present, the season being yet favourable, and not more than three days being required to make the run. This being settled, they set about reloading her, and all her cargo was in again by Saturday noon. I ordered the doors that had been taken away from the cabin to be replaced, and also the table, and chairs, and stools to be restored.

Sunday, 20th. We had divine service, as usual,

and there was no noisy mirth or frivolous conduct during the rest of the day.

Monday, 21st. They this morning began to fish the mast, and, as there were seven or eight feet of stump standing above the deck, we were confident it could be made perfectly strong and secure. The shrouds and backstays, together with the mainstay, and everything else, as far as was practicable, had been prepared at Kingston. The mast was up, the crosstrees and top on, the standing rigging overhead, and the main-topmast an end by the middle of the week, and by Saturday I had the pleasure to see all the yards across, the running rigging rove, the sails bent—in short, everything in place, and the brig towed round by the boats and anchored off the plantation. I was happy to find there was but little occasion for the pumps, the leakage requiring scarcely more than the ordinary spells of twice a day.

Sunday, 27th. There was a general muster to prayers at ten o'clock, and at one all hands partook of a dinner under the cotton-tree, as on the Sunday after their arrival. At noon the brig hoisted her colours, which had been taken down from the flagstaff on the promontory, and a large union jack I had brought with me from Jamaica was hoisted there in its place: the colours of the schooner and the Avon were also flying, so that, altogether, we looked very grand.

Monday, 28th. It was determined that the brig should not sail until we got the twelve-pounder up to the flagstaff, which was a formidable undertaking. Early in the morning the gun was landed on the rocks below the plantation house, and, by means of a timber-carriage, we soon succeeded in transporting our noble piece of ordnance to the foot of the acclivity, at the point where the footpath had formerly been made to the ravine. But the carpenters found it necessary to widen this avenue; after which, by the aid of planks, tackles, and parbuckles, we at

length dragged the gun up to the flagstaff. That accomplished, its carriage easily followed, and the gun was mounted before sunset. I now gave Captain Taylor letters to my cousin, and instructions how to proceed if he should not find him at the Bay of Honduras; also a letter to my uncle at Bristol, containing a detail of my proceedings, so far as they related to his business. It is scarcely necessary to mention that, after thanking them for their intended kindness, I signified that change of circumstances made it necessary that I should give up all intention of settling at the Bay.

Tuesday, 29th. Having given Captain Taylor the marks for going out of the southern channel, at about nine o'clock he took his leave. Purdy, who was acquainted with all the reefs and shoals, was put on board the Avon, and, as soon as the brig got under weigh, he made sail ahead, leading her out safely to the offing. He then saw her clear of the shoals, and returned about four o'clock.

During the remainder of the week the people were variously employed, and Captain Drake, with the two New-England blacks, constructed, near the flagstaff, an excellent platform for our gun. I kept a regular daybook, in which every one's labour was noted down, and the amount of wages due them carried to their credit, their rations and other things being charged to them. Of this they were informed, so that they felt it to be for their interest to be industrious, not only to earn a daily subsistence, but to have something beyond, in credit on the books.

Sunday, May 4th. The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock, and our congregation numbered twenty-four. Before commencing service, I said a few words on the gratitude we owe to the God who made us and the earth on which we tread, and by whose goodness everything grows that we use for food. I then added that He had ordered one day in seven to be set apart from labour, that we may

worship Him, asking Him in prayer for all that is needful to us, and rendering thanks to Him for all the blessings by which we are surrounded. After service I told them that we intended to devote a part of the day to teaching them to read, and that such as chose to learn might stay with us till their dinner-time: they all remained. My dear wife now brought out her large wooden-mounted alphabets—the men being placed on one side of the hall, and the females on the other; she taking charge of the latter, and I of the former. I pointed to a large A on one side of the wooden book (if a piece of board may be so called; and why not “a wooden book” as well as “a horn book?” for such was the sort of book by which we were first taught our letters): I endeavoured to give this letter a sound as in *father*, considering it less exceptionable than that usually given in teaching the alphabet. After they had separately, and then together, pronounced it, imitating the sound I gave it, I turned to them the other side of the board, exhibiting the letter B; and these symbols, being made by myself with chalk, were readily replaced by others. As I proceeded with my scholars, the mistress went on, *pari passu*, as we would say at school, with hers. After this we tried their recollection of both letters shown together, and then one after the other, in a dodging manner, assisting them when they were at fault. They took the lesson good-naturedly, sometimes laughing at other's mistakes, and sometimes at their own. The old people (who sat by without taking any part in the exercises) seemed to be highly amused. We dismissed our school a little before one o'clock, expressing our pleasure at seeing them so attentive, and desiring Mira, who could now read pretty well, to go over the process with them in the evening. The afternoon was spent innocently, and all retired early to repose.

Monday, 5th. The sound of the conch summoned

the people to their labours. "Then my people are slaves!" said I to myself, as the deep intonations of the shell fell upon my ear: sounds I well remembered to have heard in Jamaica every morning, when sleeping at Mr. Dickinson's pen. "I will no more of it," said I to my dear Eliza, who readily entered into my feelings, and applauded my resolution. "You are right, my Edward," said she; "let us have nothing here to make our people feel that they have been bought with our money." I now hastily called Diego to me, and told him what had been passing in my mind, desiring him to blow the conch no more, but try what he could do with the bugle, which I now took down from the place where I had hung it, and gave to him.

Our house now began to look very respectable. All our furniture was in, and one of the bedsteads put up. Besides, I might now call it our castle; for the twenty stand of arms brought from Jamaica were under its roof, in the arm-chest in which they came. At twelve o'clock Diego blew a blast from the bugle, and the people returned to dinner; at two they resumed their work, and at six another blast announced the cessation of labour for the day. Thus our work was carried on during the week.

Sunday, 11th. This Sabbath was employed, like the preceding, in devotional exercises and teaching.

Monday, 12th. Our crops of corn, roots, &c., were now ripe, yielding an abundant return, and the hands were busily engaged in gathering them. The quantity, I had foreseen, would be far greater than we could put into our present buildings, and we had for some time been actively employed in putting up an additional large storehouse, which we hoped to have finished by the end of the week. This we were the more anxious to accomplish, as the rains would soon set in; and, putting as many hands upon it as could work, by Friday morning it was boarded over, and our remaining stock of provisions, &c.,

placed in it. On the following day the rain came down in torrents, and we had much reason to congratulate ourselves on our activity and foresight. It continued to rain, with temporary intermissions, till the following Thursday, and, of course, but little was done; but, as soon as the weather cleared up, no time was lost in getting in our seeds, and setting out our plantains, bananas, &c. A plantation was also now commenced on the opposite island, and the Bermudians were sent there with axes, to clear away such of the trees as might be in the way.

Captain Drake was meanwhile employed in making a survey of the islands, which he completed on the 31st, and presented me with a chart, keeping a duplicate for himself; and I was so much pleased with them that I presented him with a couple of doubloons.

Sunday, June 1st. Our people were unusually interested in the devotions of the day, and we gave ample time to our Sunday teachings. Our God was, in truth, with us; and we saw, with delight, our people improving in knowledge and in religious culture.

Wednesday, 5th. My dear wife and myself this day visited the new plantation. We found it delightfully situated on a gentle slope, nearly half a mile in extent every way, and enclosed by an amphitheatre of steep rocky eminences, terminating only at the water's edge; these steeps being beautifully wooded with various species of palm and other trees, among which we saw flocks of paroquets, and different birds with brilliant plumage. "Dearest!" said I to my Eliza, as we stood under the shade of a magnificent palm, on the highest part of the cleared ground, "I hope to see a comfortable house built here at no very distant day, and occupied by some of your beloved friends and mine from England." "We want nothing else, dear Edward," she replied, "to complete our happiness."

Then pausing a little, she added, "No; I should be ungrateful to God to allow that wish to pass. I do not want even that to complete my happiness. I want nothing, my honoured husband," said she, "but you, and the Spirit of Him whom we desire to serve. But," she resumed, sweetly smiling, "I should nevertheless rejoice to see our friends, and to see them here, as you so fondly anticipate." I gazed tenderly upon her, but my heart was too full to make any reply.

Sunday, 8th. We passed this day much as we had the previous Sabbath.

Monday, 9th. Having now accomplished everything that required the whole strength of the settlement, I proposed to Captain Drake that he should undertake a voyage to Kingston in a week or two, to bring us some supplies of building materials; and that we might contribute something from the island towards paying for them, I suggested that he should take Martin and Purdy in the canoe, with provisions, and a sail to make a tent, and endeavour to catch some turtle, where they had been seen in great abundance, among the small islands to the north of the eastern reef. He instantly approved of the plan; and, indeed, I could scarcely have found another man so well suited in all respects for the various duties that devolved upon him.

In the course of the week, accompanied by my dear Eliza, I made another visit to the new plantation, and resolved to make a settlement there. The captain made several turtling expeditions, and was very successful.

Sunday, 15th. We assembled at the usual hour to prayers, and it was delightful to perceive the increasing intelligence and devotion of our congregation. In the afternoon Mira held her school, as she had for some time been accustomed to do, under the silk-cotton-tree, and the sight never failed to afford us inexpressible delight.

Monday, 16th. Captain Drake again set off in pursuit of turtles, and by Thursday we had no less than one hundred and five collected for shipment, so that it was now determined to send off the schooner immediately. She was accordingly hauled to the rock and ballasted with sand, well wetted to give it solidity; and on this bed of wet sand the turtles were to be placed on their backs, in which situation buckets of seawater would be thrown over them two or three times a day during the passage. On Friday evening the sails were bent and the vessel was ready for sea. No work was done on Saturday, and the Sunday, as usual, was kept as holy time.

Monday, June 23d. The men began shipping the turtle at break of day, and soon after Captain Drake waited on me for his orders. I gave him letters to Mr. Green, at Kingston, for Messrs. Perry and Co., for my uncle, and also letters from my wife and self to our friends in Gloucestershire. "Put these in your pocket," said I; "and let us look over the list I have made out of supplies required from Kingston." We conned it over, and, after making a few additions, he put the paper into his pocket also. The list embraced all sorts of lumber, two canoes, a marble muller and slab to grind our cacao, a coffee-roaster, glass for windows, and Spanish whiting and linseed oil to make putty; then, one ram and six ewes, a basket cage of live pigeons, &c., &c., with as many brick as could conveniently be stowed under the cargo; and a memorandum was added, instructing Captain Drake to obtain a free negro mason or bricklayer, if possible, to settle among us, and to purchase four healthy young lads, to assist in various operations. I estimated the cost of this cargo at 1200 dollars; and calculating that the turtle would average eight dollars apiece, I took credit on their account for 800 dollars, and gave Captain Drake 50 doubloons, which

were equivalent to 800 more. At sunrise our colours were hoisted, and at nine o'clock the gallant Porgy sailed out of the harbour, through the northern passage, with a fine breeze from the eastward.

The carpenter had been employed for some time in building two additional houses, and by the 7th of July they were completed, so that our people, who had been but very indifferently lodged, were now much better accommodated.

Thus, day after day, we went on with our customary avocations, without anything special occurring until Wednesday, the 16th of July, when we had the pleasure of seeing the schooner enter the harbour from the northward. At two o'clock she came to an anchor, and in a few minutes after we had the inexpressible happiness of receiving letters from England. After shaking hands with Captain Drake and congratulating him on his return, I put a few questions to him respecting the success of his voyage, which he answered in a plain and direct manner; a quality highly to be commended at all times, but more especially when the questioner is anxious to proceed to other matters. Eliza had already gone into her room to read and enjoy her dear Awbury letters free from all intrusion, and I now took a chair aside, to the farther part of the hall, and began on my own budget—Perry and Co. first. The treasure and bills had all arrived safe; they had paid Captain James £400 for freight, and, after defraying other charges and paying a trifling commission, had funded £56,000 in the three per cent. South Sea stock at 83, being in stock £67,424, leaving in their hands £1092 at my disposal. The information gave me great satisfaction, although the possible result had never disquieted me for a moment; but in this consummation I obtained the certain means of doing whatever our highest wishes might aspire to. After reading this letter, I hastened to communicate the contents to my dear wife, who was evidently

gratified, but in a moment after placed in my hands the letter she had been reading from her revered father. It commenced by giving praise to Almighty God for our deliverance from shipwreck, and for his wonderful providence towards us since that event. He received the present of his beloved child with the same feelings that she had in sending it; but he hoped, before his eyes closed on this world, it would be granted him to embrace her once more. Her sisters also wrote most affectionately, and concluded by saying she must not be surprised if one of them were to take us at our word, and pay us a visit. My letters from my family, which I now opened and read, were equally gratifying. In one of these my brother expressed himself as being determined to join me as soon as possible. But there was yet another letter, and that was from my uncle, which I had just glanced at, and then put by for a while, having perceived something in its tenour I could not at once make out. However, we read it attentively in the evening; but, for his sake, I will not repeat it. I presume he was so puzzled by what I had written, and what he had heard of money being remitted to Awbury, that he did not know what to think, and, of course, could not know what to write. Had he been made acquainted with the freight I sent in the frigate, his brain would have been completely addled.

Captain Drake, in the mean time, had left us, but he returned at five o'clock with four fine new negro lads, clothed decently in sailors' jackets and trousers. The poor youths stood before the door, perhaps pondering on their fate, or, it may be, reckless of the future; but, believing them to possess the feelings common to civilized man, I desired Anna to give each of them a wheaten cake, and tell them to behave well, and they should be kindly treated. They all understood her, being from her own country; and they leaped for joy when she spoke to

them, and at the earnest of future kindness they had received from her hand.

When they went away, Captain Drake handed me Mr. Green's letter, which was short, enclosing the invoice and his accounts. All the things ordered had been procured, and the captain had executed all his commissions except procuring the mason. He had made his passage to Kingston in the short space of six days, and did not lose a turtle. On his arrival he found a ready market for them, at something more than we had anticipated, having received for the hundred and five 850 dollars. He paid 600 dollars for the four negro lads, 70 dollars for seven sheep, the two canoes cost 50 dollars each, and the amount of the invoice was 304 dollars; so that, after paying all this and some incidental expenses, he brought me back 25 doubloons out of the 50 with which I had intrusted him.

On Friday we began to unload, and by Saturday night the cargo was all on shore except the bricks, which we concluded to leave on board for a while for ballast.

Sunday, 20th. As soon as the bell rang we all assembled at prayers, and after service the business of teaching began, when the new scholars were turned over to Martin and Purdy to be taught their alphabet.

Monday, 21st. As we were now somewhat at leisure, and had plenty of materials, I determined to commence a building on what, from our encounter with those animals, we called the Peccary Field, for any of our relatives that might join us, and I requested Captain Drake to superintend the work. So, on the following day, taking four men in the boat, with our big dog, a couple of muskets, and four pikes, we set forth to fix on the most eligible spot for the contemplated dwelling, and to mark it out according to a plan I had with me in my pocket; Eliza, for once, not wishing to accompany me, for fear of what might

happen to the peccaries. We landed at the bottom of the creek, and, leaving the boat there, walked up to the field, each man carrying a pike. In a short time I fixed on a rising slope, about a quarter of a mile west of the little fresh-water brook, and marked out a space of forty-eight feet by thirty-six, so as to allow four bedrooms, two on each side, with two saloons for sitting-rooms between. We had nearly completed our business, when suddenly there rushed out a herd of peccaries; but Lion, being a quiet though powerful dog, took little notice of them, as they showed no disposition to attack us or him—rather, indeed, seeming disposed to scrape acquaintance with us, and particularly with him—but one of them being somewhat rude in his advances, Lion gave him a turn over, and a battle instantly began. The dog was attacked by three or four of them at the same moment, one of which he pinned to the ground; but the others, finding themselves unmolested, assailed him so furiously with their tusks, that the blood ran in a stream from his sides and shoulders: their numbers constantly increasing, too, at the same time, he was soon beset on all sides, so that, if we had not run instantly to his rescue, large and powerful as he was, they must soon have destroyed him. The blacks were directed to charge the little desperadoes with their pikes, yet not until many of them were killed did the rest retreat. We pursued them into the wood, but not a musket was fired, for fear of alarming her whom we had left behind at the plantation house. We now finished the business on which we came, and returned before sunset with a cargo consisting of live crayfish and dead peccaries.

On Friday morning the Avon was loaded with building materials, the timber carriage, and the pioneers' tools for the Peccary shore, having on board Xavier and Derrick, the two New-England blacks, and the two sailor negro boys, Purdy being sent to

assist his friends at the new plantation. Diego found plenty of work for himself and his party; so, as we required a man to be at our call, to paddle one of the small canoes wherever we might require, I fixed on Martin for this purpose, and to visit the lookout at the flagstaff. In this way things were conducted for several weeks, each one attending to his appointed business.

Friday, September 5th. The houses were now finished at the plantation on Edward's Island (the name given to it by my dear Eliza), and Diego came to say that many of our vegetable productions were ready for getting in. The men, therefore, went heartily to work, and early in October the produce from all our plantations was gathered and safely housed.

Tuesday, October 14th. I now placed Allwood, Manus, and Purdy in the three houses on Edward's Island, dividing the plantation into three parts, and allotting four acres of ground to each; and Eliza, sending for their wives, gave to them six hens and a cock, and as many ducks, apiece; also a young she-goat to each, and one buck for the whole. Both the women and their husbands expressed much gratitude, making many professions of the warmest attachment.

CHAPTER XIV.

SUNDAY, October 26th. We were much pleased with the increasing devotion of our people, and with the progress they made in learning, many of them being able to read words of one and two syllables, in regular sentences.

Monday, 27th. I had, for some time past, ordered a careful lookout every day at sunrise from

the flagstaff, and Martin this morning reported a brig in the offing. Accompanied by Captain Drake, I went immediately to the height; the vessel was at no great distance, and we could perceive with the glass a union jack flying at her foretop-gallantmast head. I despatched Martin with the information to my wife, and directed him to get the Avon ready with all possible despatch to go out of the harbour. The shot was then drawn from the gun, and the match lighted; and, having given Martin sufficient time to deliver his message, the piece was fired and the colours hoisted: this was answered from the brig by the union jack being hauled down and the ensign hoisted at the main. I had now no doubt of its being Captain Taylor, returned to us in our own ark, and perhaps bringing with him some of our family. I hastened, therefore, to communicate to my beloved partner my anticipations. A thousand fond ideas flashed across her mind the moment I spoke, and in her transport she exclaimed, "Oh, my dear Edward! if—" then pausing, added, "but just as it may please God! He is our kind Father, and I rest confidently on his goodness: be it as He will!"

The Avon was quickly under weigh, with Captain Drake and the schooner's crew on board; and now my dear wife and myself hastened to the promontory. By the time we reached the flagstaff the Avon was alongside of the brig, as she lay to, with her main-topsail aback. They both quickly made sail, the Avon leading, and as they approached the promontory, I could perceive a female on deck. We now hastily descended and ran to the shore, our hearts full of tender anticipations. I put the glass to my eye, and, to my inexpressible joy, saw distinctly my brother, and my Eliza's sister Amelia, on the quarter-deck, looking towards us. "They are indeed there, my best beloved!" I exclaimed, "your sister Amelia and my brother!" "Blessed

be God!" she said, and sank into my arms. In a little time she sighed deeply, then, by degrees, raised up her head and smiled, looking earnestly towards the vessel. The schooner's best boat had been manned by Diego, Xavier, and the Allwoods, so that, the moment the brig dropped anchor, we stepped in, and rowed alongside. Eliza impatiently sprang upon deck, and I quickly followed her, both rushing to the arms of our dear brother and sister. It was truly a blessed meeting.

I was glad to see Captain Taylor again, shook him heartily by the hand, and invited him to dine with us; then, embarking in the boat, we soon reached the shore, where we again welcomed our dear relatives with a tender embrace; my beloved wife exclaiming, "This is, indeed, a happy day to us." "And to us also, dear Eliza," added her sister.

They expressed their surprise at everything around them. "And was it here that you were wrecked, brother?" said James. "Yes," I replied; "here: we will point out the exact spot to you by-and-by." "But this island is not the uncivilized, desolate place in which we expected to find you," he answered. "No," replied my Eliza; "our God has made the wilderness to blossom as the rose; for when we were thrown upon this coast, Edward and I, and *Fidele* here, were all our company." "O, *Fidele*!" cried Amelia, the little creature at last attracting her attention, "come here." The fond animal, on being spoken to, raised his fore feet upon her knee, and seemed ready to devour her hand with caresses. "You know me, then, *Fidele*?" continued she; on which the little creature redoubled his fondness, as much as to say, "I do indeed remember you." The ladies now soon retired to the bedchamber, and I proposed to my brother to walk down with me to the beach. We met Diego by the way. "Hark you!" said I; "lodge the four lads in the plank house, and remove all the stores out of

our storeroom into the house on the north, and have a good lock fitted to it, and some shelves instantly put up there, for the reception of such things as may require them." Diego bowed more elegantly than usual, but without speaking a word, and retired to execute the orders I had given him. "Is that a negro?" said my brother; "I should say he is a very well bred man." "How can it be otherwise, brother," I replied, smiling; "is he not at court? He is my minister for the home department." At this sally James could not help smiling in turn.

At the appointed hour we had the pleasure to see the two captains walk into the hall, and our brother and sister, well dressed, soon after make their appearance. During the repast Rota received many compliments for her excellent fare and still more excellent cookery. After dinner there was set before us the best dessert our island could afford: our first pineapple was cut for the occasion, and Diego had brought in some ripe bananas from the wild plants near the spring, to which was added a fine muskmelon, plucked in the dell since we sat down to dinner. With such a display and a bottle of Canary, I was enabled to entertain our friends nobly. The captains, with becoming delicacy, left us at an early hour, and being alone, we talked over family affairs, and read our letters from Awbury, which were full of affectionate remembrances, and afforded us a heartfelt pleasure. My uncle's letter I read to myself, and said, smiling, "This is a very different letter from the last, my dear Eliza; and there is a little postscript to it from our good aunt, telling me that her Virginia nightingale is well, and that, if I have any other pretty thing to send her, Captain Taylor will take charge of it: you may, perhaps, think of something, love." The subjects that most interested us being at length nearly exhausted, we took our coffee, and soon after retired to rest.

Tuesday, 28th. Captain Taylor waited on me early in the morning, stating that he wished to proceed to the Bay of Honduras without loss of time, as my cousin would be anxiously expecting his arrival, and that, therefore, it would be necessary to land immediately the supplies which had been shipped for me by my uncle. I told him to do so, and that I certainly would receive whatever my uncle had sent out for me, although I had not ordered anything from him, and there were many things in the inventory, as blankets, candle-moulds, &c., that were wholly useless to us.

The amount of the invoice was £480; but my uncle had not counted without his host. He had learned from Captain Taylor that I had taken an iron chest well filled with money from Jamaica, though he could not imagine how I came by it, neither could the captain furnish him with any information beyond surmises. The story of our attack on the guardacosta's boat, too, having been magnified so as to throw a wonderful light upon that affair, my good uncle, in the letter I had just received, thus alluded to the subject: "Eh, Ned! 'tis well thee didst not lose either life or limb in the attack on the *galleon*: how much didst get for thy share? It's a secret, maybe; but thee must have got a pretty penny: heard thee hast a large iron chest full, besides the schooner thee bought, and what thee didst send to Awbury. Well, thou art a good-hearted fellow, Ned; and, now thy brother and his wife wish to join thee, I let Taylor take them out for £20 a head, as he tells me he can pop in on you without going much out of his way; and I take upon me to send thee out an investment by him, of which thee mayst take much, or little, or all; but the goods were shipped purposely for thee, and thee may make good profit on them, if thee knowest how. The amount, to be sure, is large, but if 't isn't convenient for thee to pay ready money (for which will allow five per cent. dis-

count), thee shall have credit for twelve months, till Taylor makes his next voyage." My uncle had enclosed in his letter a counter-statement to mine, respecting the brig's disbursements, and the prices of the articles I had taken out of her while she lay a wreck, making the balance considerably more in his own favour than I had done: however, I cheerfully let it pass, without objection or comment, and determined to pay according to his own account. After breakfast Captain Drake took an inventory of the things as they were landed, and superintended their removal to the great storehouse. Meanwhile I settled accounts with Captain Taylor, taking my uncle at his word, and deducting five per cent. for cash from the invoice prices; and this being done, I gave him a set of bills on Perry and Co. for the amount of the invoice and balance of the other accounts, taking from him receipts for the same.

While I was thus employed, my wife and her sister, with James, were busy in writing long letters to England, in the midst of which operation I interrupted Eliza, saying, "Go, dear, and put up a piece of the silver tissue for my aunt, and tell her it came from China—which I believe it did, somehow or other—and write her a few lines, with my love." I then sat down and wrote my own letters, first to England, and then to my cousin at George's Key. When all these matters were completed, it was too late for the brig to go out of harbour that day, as she had at least five leagues to run before she could be considered fairly beyond the reefs and shoals.

Wednesday, 29th. Captain Taylor took his leave as soon as the seabreeze freshened, and the Avon got under weigh with him to see him clear of the shoals. After breakfast I went out with James to show him the houses on the plantation, and the different parts of my little domain. He was delighted with what he saw, and, after visiting the various places most worthy of attention, "Now," said I,

"James, you must take charge of all these things, and keep regular accounts of them as I have done, and I will allow you a hundred a year for doing it; and, as soon as circumstances will permit, you shall commence trading as a merchant, and all the money you can make shall be your own. I will give you a house, and lands, and servants, and enable you to start fair, unencumbered, and in the possession of every requisite for success." "My dear brother," he replied, "I will be guided entirely by you, and hope I shall not be ungrateful for your kindness."

After finishing our rambles we returned to dinner. James was full of what he had seen, and, the moment he entered the hall, began to describe to his wife the wonders of the place.

The next day my brother and his wife, accompanied by Captain Drake, made an excursion to Pecary Field in the schooner's boat, while my dear Eliza and I remained at home, to confer on various matters connected with the new situation in which we were placed.

The two following days were chiefly employed in visiting our various establishments, in conversing with our new guests, and in making arrangements for their future happiness and comfort.

Sunday, September 2d. The bell rang for prayers at ten o'clock, and all the congregation were soon convened. Every one came dressed in their best, and our brother and sister were much impressed by the scene. I doubt not it raised us higher in their esteem than all our wealth.

Monday, 3d. I had now determined to despatch the schooner again to Jamaica; and, sending for Captain Drake, I announced to him my intention, and that she must be got ready as speedily as possible. "It shall be done, sir," said he; and immediately left to give his directions. The utmost diligence was used for several days in making the necessary preparations, and the time drew near for her sailing.

Friday, 7th. We were all busily employed this morning in writing to England; my wife and her sister to our friends, and I in transcribing duplicates of letters, with the bills given to Captain Taylor for my uncle, together with an order for goods by the *Mary* next year: I wrote also to Perry and Co., and to Mr. Green at Kingston. This done, I made out Captain Drake's orders, desiring him to bring back with him two sawyers and one bricklayer, all free people, if he could procure them. I did not care whether they were whites, blacks, or mulattoes, with or without families; but, if he could not engage free people, he was to purchase slave workmen—single men, if he could get them; but, if not, to take husbands, wives, and children at a fair price; also, to buy seven young negro men and four young females, newly arrived from Guinea; and to take in bricks, planks, boards, one hundred bushels of maize, bales of negro clothing, bales of checks and stripes, boxes of linen, &c., &c., agreeably to the memoranda of items, and one chest of tea; also, household furniture, as per memorandum, and to bring with him a fast-rowing six-oared boat; also, twenty stand of arms, with accoutrements, and to procure fifty suits of soldiers' clothing, if possible.

By the evening the schooner was ready for sea, and the wages of Martin and Purdy, and of the two New-Englanders, Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, were now paid up to the day. On receiving their money, Martin and Purdy expressed a desire to take their wives to Kingston; and Hall and Hackett asked me if I would give them houses and a piece of ground if they should bring wives with them from Jamaica. I granted both requests, of which I informed Captain Drake when I put my papers into his hand, telling him, at the same time, to be very careful, on his return, to preserve propriety in the schooner, and to give the women the steerage entirely to themselves, with directions to the wives of the men go-

ing out to take special charge of the brides and negro girls. My dear wife hearing this, sent for Mira, Martin's wife, into our bedroom, and there gave her some useful advice, following it by a present of ten dollars.

Saturday, 8th. Early in the morning Captain Drake came to take his leave, when I counted him down 225 doubloons, equal to 3500 dollars, which is about £860 sterling; but desired him, with a smile, to bring back as many of the gold pieces as he could. He got under weigh about nine o'clock, and passed through the northern channel, with a fine breeze at E. by N., followed by the good wishes of all for himself and his crew.

Sunday, 9th. We greatly enjoyed our assembling together on this holy day, in happy quietness, with no hurry of spirits or distraction of thought; and after prayers our school was carefully attended to, our brother and sister cheerfully lending their aid.

Monday, 10th. We had now full leisure to enjoy ourselves with our dear friends in various agreeable recreations. Sometimes we walked abroad in the cool of the morning on the beach, collecting shells; or, when the sun was high, reposed under the shade of one of our many fine trees, and there read Gil Blas, or the Arabian Nights' Entertainments, or Swift's Gulliver; but Eliza's favourite was Paradise Lost, which, with a few other choice books, her father had sent her by Amelia. From this sublime work she would sometimes read a noble passage to us, and always with great pathos; for her soul was in the subject, and she therefore did the author justice. Thus we continued to pass our time, observing faithfully the Sabbath as it came round.

Monday, 1st December. The carpenters now reported the house at Peccary Field completed; we therefore visited it in the Avon on the same day, and were highly pleased with it—its commodious size, its excellent workmanship and materials, and the

beauty of the situation. I bestowed the praise he so well merited on Allwood and his coadjutors, and requested them to put up at once two small houses near this new mansion for its domestics, which they promised to do.

We were getting a little anxious about the schooner; but, as the weather had been fine, I attributed her non-arrival to some difficulty Captain Drake might have met with in executing his commissions. Manus had already finished the furniture he had been making for the three houses at Allwood's Plantation, and by Thursday, the 18th, the two outhouses at Pecary Field were completed. Still the schooner did not arrive, and our anxiety gradually increased. My dear wife could not help observing my disquietude, and took every opportunity to set my mind at ease, first by representing the probability there was that my orders could not all be immediately executed, and next, and chiefly, by directing my thoughts to the providence of that God who had hitherto made us his especial and constant care.

Monday, 22d. Early in the morning a schooner was discovered from the flagstaff by Diego, and he reported her standing in for the promontory. I lost no time in ascending the height, and instantly, to my great joy, recognised our long-looked-for vessel. She was now near enough to enable me to see distinctly with the glass everything upon deck; and, I must confess, the sight confounded me not a little. "Diego," said I, "Captain Drake has brought all Kingston with him, I believe: take the glass, and see what a crowd is there: what am I to do with all these people?" Diego took the spyglass, but I did not wait for any reply, hurrying myself away to tell the news to my dear wife, and to prepare for the reception of my friend Drake and his host of new settlers. When I arrived Diego was close at my heels, and, having given the necessary information to Eliza and our friends, we all hastened to the front of

the open ground just above the rocks, to await the schooner's arrival. She was not long in making her appearance, and, in a few minutes after, passed us and came to anchor. We were astonished at seeing her deck so full of people, and the more so from many of them—men, women, and children—being *whites*. However, Drake was soon on shore, and I welcomed him as the lost found, but could not help exclaiming, at the same time, "Who are all these you have got there?" "I don't know," he replied, "whether I have done right or wrong, but I have brought four families that I found in distress at Kingston. The men had belonged to the temporary corps that was raised for putting down the Maroons, but, not answering the purpose, it was disbanded. Such as chose were sent back to America, whence they came; but these four families, being foolishly advised, remained in Jamaica, and gradually found themselves in no better condition than the free negroes, which is bad enough." "Go and tell them," said I, "they shall be well received; but where to lodge them, Drake, I really don't know. Who else have you got?" "Every one," he answered, "that you wished me to obtain." "You have done well," I rejoined. "Go and tell them, also, that they shall be treated kindly, but for a little time they must put up with great inconveniences: and let them land forthwith."

In about half an hour the soldiers and their families were conducted to the mansion, and brought into the hall, where I received them courteously. The men were beyond the prime of life, and looked the worse for wear; the wives were slatterns; and the children looked sickly. The children were nine altogether, four boys and five girls, the youngest in its mother's arms. I told Diego to show them under the cotton-tree, whose ample shade would make a comfortable temporary retreat, and to desire Rota to give them some refreshment.

"James," said I to my brother, after they were gone, "there is nothing to be done, I see, but to convert your house into a barrack, till we can turn ourselves round to make some other disposition of these people." "It is your own, brother," he replied; "do with it as you please; but if it were not, you should be quite welcome to it."

The black strangers were next brought on shore, and introduced in rotation. The sawyers had been purchased at 400 dollars each—a great price; but they were fine fellows, and unencumbered. I spoke civilly to them, and desired Captain Drake to request Allwood to take them for the present to his plantation. The bricklayer came next—a mulatto free man, named Hart, with a wife and two young children, a boy and a girl. I told him I would fulfil every engagement made by Captain Drake, but for a little time he and his family must put up with such lodgings as we could give them, and then directed Diego to place his family in the plank house. The new negroes were now mustered, and well-looking young people they were, decently clad in Osnaburgh—seven men and four girls. "What shall I do with all these?" said I to myself; then, pausing for a moment, I concluded to put the men in the outhouses at Peccary Field. But, that my embarrassment might be more complete, the two New-Englanders had brought wives with them, and they were now presented.

"Dame Rota," said I, "and what is to be done with these?" "Let them be with Derrick and his wife, if it please massa," she replied, courtesying. "But then," I answered, "Derrick and his wife must take their husbands also." "No, massa, they no married yet," returned Rota, looking with no inconsiderable importance as she spoke. "You are quite right, duenna," I exclaimed; "we will see to that on Sunday, and you may tell them so."

There was so much bustle in the settlement in

consequence of the arrival of all these people, that we found no time even to sit down to dinner. Captain Drake, while snatching a morsel, handed me my letters, and gave me a general idea of his voyage and expenditures; but we were too much engrossed with considering what was now to be done to enter into details. He said he had expended all the doubloons except ten, and these he now handed me. The people were all disposed of before night according to my arrangements, and made as comfortable as circumstances would permit.

The remainder of the week was principally employed in making the best arrangements we could for the accommodation of our new comers, and at its close, by clearing out the large storehouse, and other contrivances to make room, they were tolerably well settled. The Avon, meanwhile, was hauled round to the creek at Peccary Field, and, as the rainy season was at hand, we concluded to let most of her cargo remain on board until it was over.

Sunday, 28th. At ten o'clock the whole settlement assembled for divine worship, which was conducted with as much order and solemnity as possible, considering the motley group that formed our congregation. After our devotions were concluded, Xavier's infant was baptized, and then I proceeded to marry Ned Hall and Ben Hackett, the two New-England blacks, to their betrothed, who had accompanied them from Kingston.

Monday, 29th. This morning I directed Hart, the bricklayer, to construct a limekiln on the isthmus, to the northwest of the plank house, the promontory there being composed entirely of limestone. Woodcutters were also set to work to clear additional land, both at Peccary Field and on Edward's Island.

1736. Tuesday, January 6th. The wind had now become very unsettled, in consequence of which I gave orders for all work to be suspended, and sent such supplies as might be needed for a week or two

to the distant settlements. The sails of the schooner were ordered to be unbent, and the topmast, yards, and gaffs got down, and all made snug.

The character of the night bore testimony to the wisdom of these precautions; for it blew and rained tremendously, chiefly from the northward. The noise of the storm was frightful—what with the howling of the wind, the pelting of the rain, and the uproar of the waters beating against the rocks. Our settlement was the only one completely exposed to its full violence; and this reflection, in thinking of the others, afforded us some consolation.

As the sun rose the gale abated, but the rain continued to fall in torrents. The wind came now only in squalls, but these were bad enough. This dreadful weather continued, with scarcely any intermission, for five days, clearing up suddenly and permanently on Monday at sunrise.

Monday, 12th. We found the beach heaped up with seaweed, broken reeds, and shells; the turtle enclosure was knocked in pieces, and the staves scattered in every direction; the sugarcanes were broken short off or knocked down, and the pineapple plants were much injured. All the buildings stood secure; but the stoccado of the poultry-yard was blown down, and a part of it carried to a considerable distance, and some of the poultry had been killed. Early in the day we were visited by Captain Drake, who reported all well at Peccary Field; and we had the pleasure to receive the same tidings from Edward's Island.

Tuesday, 13th. The carpenters were now set to work to get up three houses at the northern extremity of the isthmus, on the plan of those on Edward's Island; and Diego, at the head of all the force he could muster, commenced his field labours. The men worked with the utmost diligence, so that by the 24th the planting was finished. Leisure was now afforded to unload the Porgy; and after the

furniture for my brother's house was taken out, she was hauled to the black rock below the promontory, and her cargo landed.

The Sabbath was observed, as usual, with all due reverence.

Monday, 26th. I had been a good while impressed with the importance of some sort of military organization among our people, and I now sent for Corporal Craig (for such I had made him) and his three military comrades, and told them that I had determined to devote every Saturday to military exercise. They were quite delighted with this information, for it revived in their minds the recollections of proud days gone by, when they were subject to no servile employments. The clothing-chest was accordingly opened, and having their choice, they managed to make a tolerably good fit, looking extremely well with their broad-flapped red coats and cocked hats, quite like brave musketeers, as they were; but when they put on their broad belts, and shouldered arms, I felt a glow within me I cannot describe: I hoped some day to see all my people appear thus.

On Saturday morning we had a grand muster in the shade to the north of the promontory, thirty-four being present, including Drake and ourselves. Arms were brought, and the men put in training. We kept them at it till noon, when dinner was served on the field; after which they recommenced, and the drill was continued until five.

Sunday, February 1st. Our new colonists began to show something like devotion at prayers, which afforded us great satisfaction. I endeavoured, on this occasion, in a few plain words, to impress them with a sense of their dependance on Almighty God, not only for their preservation in this life, but for all their hopes of happiness in the life to come; also, to remind them of the duties they owe to Him; to one another, and to all men, of whatever country

or colour : and I took the opportunity to state to them, that, though some of them were my slaves bought with my money, I should treat them in the same manner as the white indented servants in Jamaica were treated—that is, after a service of seven years, every one of them should be free ; and that it was my determination such should be the law of the island ; agreeably to which, I should require every resident on it to sign a paper to that effect ; and that every child born on the island of slave parents, should be considered free from the moment of its birth, excepting that, as a compensation for the support given by the master to such children in their childhood, they should be bound to serve him until the completion of their twentieth year. When all this had been duly explained to them, the whole assembly set up a shout of joyous approval.

Monday, 2d. Allwood now reported the three houses finished at Soldiers' Town (for so we called the place, in honour of our military associates), and I desired him to set about building three similar dwellings at Edward's Island, one on each of the four-acre lots last cleared and cultivated.

On Saturday we had another drill, and the Sabbath was kept with due solemnity.

During the two following weeks nothing remarkable occurred : I gave Allwood so much assistance, that the buildings on Edward's Island seemed to rise as if by magic ; and Diego was employed, meanwhile, with his men, in enclosing the land around them with hurdles, and in clearing the grounds.

Tuesday, 24th. Martin reported a Spanish schooner in the offing. (I have omitted to mention that we had some time before been visited by a Spanish vessel, and we supposed that this might be the same, returned to trade with us ; and so it proved.) We answered his signal by hoisting our colours, with a gun ; on which the bugle was sounded, and all the men hastened, by boats and canoes, to headquarters.

Captain Drake went out in the Avon to pilot the stranger into port. In the mean time the soldiers were dressed in their regimentals, and a sentinel was planted at the pass between the black rock and the promontory, and another before our mansion. The vessel soon anchored, and the captain came on shore, escorted by Drake. I had dressed for the occasion, and was sitting in state, Corporal Craig, in his regimentals, standing on one side, and Diego on the other. The Spaniard said he had come from Santa Martha on purpose to trade with us; adding, that he had reported the good treatment he had received when he stopped in here before, and he had no doubt other vessels would visit us: I assured him of my protection, and hoped he would have no reason to complain of the treatment he might receive at the island at any time; and, in return, that I should have no complaint to make of any of his people, all of whom must be on board every evening at the firing of the gun. He now bowed and took his leave, but went to the storehouse, accompanied by Diego, where my brother awaited him.

They proceeded immediately to business, in the transaction of which my presence was not at all necessary. Fifty per cent. on the invoice had been fixed as a general rule in making sales, so that James could give the price of every article instantly; and as the Spaniard decided on anything, it was turned out. He took nearly all our refined sugar, two boxes of linen, several boxes of checks and coloured handkerchiefs, some bales of negro clothing, and, to our surprise, most of the blankets and all the candle-moulds, which, he said, were for the Cordilleras—the mountainous country to the westward of Santa Martha. He bought, also, a quantity of hoes and billhooks, some barrels of salt beef and pork, a few hampers of cheese, a large quantity of copper, both in pigs and sheets, some brass and tin, most of the spare crockery, and several boxes of ironmongery

and nails. The articles thus selected amounted to £570 sterling by invoice, to which 50 per cent. being added for freight, insurance, and profit, gave £855 sterling—£1197 in Jamaica currency, or 3591 dollars. In payment we received dyewoods to the amount of 300 dollars; two tons of bees'-wax, 296 dollars; one hundred bags of cacao, at 16 dollars each, 1600 dollars; twenty boxes of cigars, 160 dollars; and the balance of 1235 dollars in cash.

By Thursday evening he had received his goods all on board, and on Friday the logwood, bees'-wax, and cacao were shipped in the schooner for Jamaica. Captain Drake took two thousand dollars in addition, and was directed to purchase an assortment of merchandise such as was suited for the Spanish Main.

On Saturday, while the men were at drill, I adjusted the books with my brother James, and, agreeably to what I had promised, paid over to him the profits of the recent sale, amounting to 987 dollars, after deducting ten per cent. for freight and insurance. I now told him that, from this day forward, I would have nothing more to do with the trade, and that he was to charge himself with the whole stock on hand, and also with what might arrive either from Jamaica or England: that he was, however, to keep my island account for supplies, but totally distinct; and I added that I would lend him more capital at any time he should require it, expecting to be reimbursed when his circumstances would allow him to do it without inconvenience. He received my determination and assurances with many expressions of gratitude, and the sum he had just received was, he said, a handsome earnest of his future fortune.

Thursday, 11th of March. The house being now completed at Peccary Field, James took possession of it, having one of his back rooms fitted up as a store-chamber, well filled with all requisite supplies. The buildings at Edward's Island were also finished, and I sent the wives of the two New-England blacks

to occupy one house, destined for themselves and their husbands, and the two sawyers and four of the new negro men to take up their abode provisionally in the others.

In the evening, after the departure of our brother and sister, and the people they took with them, being again alone and quiet, my dear Eliza and myself felt once more to live and breathe in freedom. "You have now put the machine together, my dear Edward," said she, "and have set it in motion; and the arrangements you have made with our brother are calculated, I think, to keep it going, without your continuing to harass yourself almost to death, as you have done of late." "Indeed, love," I replied, "I hope things will go on quite smoothly, not only without much trouble, but greatly to our satisfaction and the happiness of the people; and I bless God for making me the instrument of so much good."

Sunday, 14th. After prayers, the four negro men longest with us were baptized by their respective names; also Anna, Mary, and Martha, and the children of Hart; but we did not consider the seven young negro men and four young negro women that had arrived last sufficiently advanced in Christian knowledge to entitle them to the rite. Our school, too, was duly attended to; but, from the great increase of persons requiring tuition, not much time could be given to each individual: however, as our only object was to enable them to read the Scriptures, we hoped with patience to accomplish it.

Monday, 15th. I convened the people, and in their presence placed one of the new negro men with Allwood, one with Manus Allwood, one with Xavier, and one with Derrick (although himself a slave), and one with Hart the bricklayer, to remain with them four years, to learn their respective trades; and it was stipulated that at the expiration of their apprenticeship they should again serve me

until their seven years of bondage were completed, when they should have a house and grounds allotted to them, and be free to labour for their own profit.

Corporal Craig was now formally appointed to take charge of the lookout at the flagstaff, and also of the gun, and the regimentals and arms for his three men were lodged in his house. In fine, he became my day-orderly for government arrangements, while Diego was in attendance for domestic affairs; and therefore, as I said when I introduced him to my brother James, he was my minister for the home department—and an honest and faithful minister he proved.

My dear wife and myself made frequent visits to Peccary Field to see our brother and sister, for they were so much occupied with the improvement of the place, that they could not conveniently leave it; and as I had borrowed Xavier from them for a time, I promised them an equivalent in Derrick as soon as the stoccadoes should be finished; for I was desirous in all things to observe perfect equity between man and man, and to show my brother that I did so.

Friday, the 19th. Captain Drake arrived this day from Kingston, with a full cargo for my brother, which was conveyed to the storehouse; and to my order he brought a free tailor, with his family, consisting of a youth of fifteen learning his trade, and a wife and two young daughters. He brought also half a dozen she-goats for the benefit of the settlement.

One of the houses lately built at Allwood's Bay was given to the tailor and his family, which was fitted up with everything needful; and he was soon set to work, as we wished to dress all our people in regimentals, for drill.

Wednesday, April 7th. Two schooners were reported in the offing, when our colours were hoisted, and the gun fired. Captain Drake discovered

one of them to be armed. The gun, therefore, was reloaded with shot, and he armed the crew of the Avon, and putting on his old midshipman's uniform, went out to reconnoitre, signals being agreed on. The alarm bugle was sounded, and the whole force of the colony collected, then dressed, and put under arms, while I repaired to the flagstaff. One of the strange sail had a pendant flying, which implied that she was a king's vessel: they proved both to be Spaniards, and I recognised the merchant schooner as our old friend. They soon filled their sails and stood in for the harbour. I desired the corporal to furnish the men with thirty rounds of ball cartridges by way of precaution, and place all but the sentinels behind the house. In an hour or two the vessels came to anchor in Woodland Bay; and Captain Drake being on board the armed schooner, came on shore with the Spanish captain, in his boat. Seeing with my glass that the Spaniard was in uniform, the sentinel above the landing-place was ordered to present arms to him as he passed; and another of the soldiers, that had been planted before the mansion house, paid him the same compliment.

I received him in full dress, and with all possible courtesy; and, having Diego for interpreter, asked him to what circumstance I was indebted for the honour of this visit. He answered he had been sent by the Governor of Santa Martha, in consequence of some trade with this island having been reported by the master of the schooner now in company with him. That the governor was not aware of these rocks being inhabited, much less under British authority; and he had, therefore, been despatched to inquire into the fact. "The governor has heard the truth," I replied; "and you can tell his excellency that you have seen the British flag, and heard our guns." "But, may it please your excellency," said he, "I come in peace—peace having been long established between the two countries; and it is the

desire of the Governor of Santa Martha that nothing may occur of an unfriendly nature. I am therefore directed, if your excellency will favour me with a sight of your commission, to assure you of his friendship." Diego had some trouble to translate all this, but he succeeded in making it out quite well, and I have put it in such language as I supposed the Governor of Santa Martha might have dictated. I told the officer it was an unusual thing to show a commission to the commander of an armed vessel, and that the request, therefore, was a little extraordinary; but that I wished him to return in the same spirit of amity in which he came, and therefore he should certainly see it. After ordering the corporal to parade the guard before the house, I accordingly went into the inner room for the document in question. On coming out, I perceived the men drawn up in the open space, and requested the corporal to march them to the plank house in a body, and in a quarter of an hour send Allwood back, with a corporal's guard of five, to lay on their arms near the landing-place below. Having coolly given these orders, as if it were a matter of course, I proceeded to read the commission, which Diego interpreted to the Spanish officer in the best way he could, and I then put it into his hands. He returned it immediately, with many apologies, and then took a packet from his pocket, which he delivered to me. I instantly opened it, with due respect, and, by Diego's assistance, in about an hour I seemed to comprehend its purport. A great part of it consisted of mere compliments, among which some appeared not a little extravagant, as this: "*And may your excellency live a thousand years!*" "You mistake, Diego," interrupted I, as he translated it; "Methuselah fell short of that." "Oh, yes, 'tis so, sir," he replied; "*mille annos*, a thousand years." "Oh, very well," I said; "tell the captain that I send back the same wish for his excellency the Governor of Santa Martha."

This important business being finished, I ordered a hamper of strong beer and a good Gloucester cheese to be put in the Spaniard's boat, and shortly after he took his leave, receiving the salute of the guard on embarking in his boat, to which Diego attended him. He returned me his thanks by that faithful servant for the present I had made him, and in half an hour, accompanied by the Avon clear of the shoals, he stood out to sea.

Our soldiers were now marched back, and assumed their ordinary dress, all except the corporal and his three comrades; and a sufficient number of men being sent to assist my brother, he proceeded to negotiate with the captain of the trading schooner, unloading her of her goods from Santa Martha, and loading her with such of his own as the Spaniard thought fit to take; and a profitable business it was, for James cleared not less than 1000 dollars by his sales, besides what he might get on the Spanish cargo at Kingston.

All the tradesmen and labourers were settled within a few days after the departure of the schooner, and Drake set off again to Jamaica in the Porghee. There was little or no money yet coming to any of the people, but they were satisfied, and saw that in a little time that would not be the case. I had no orders for Captain Drake except to bring four new negro men and as many girls, and I gave him 1100 dollars for that purpose.

During the absence of the schooner, our various operations went on successfully. The sawyers had accomplished a good deal, and the soldiers' lots were enclosed, and pretty well prepared for planting. My brother had done much to Peccary Field, and our settlement was cut off from the isthmus by a strong barricado from the black rock to the face of the promontory.

Saturday, May 1st. Captain Drake arrived this morning while we were at drill. We were happy

to see him, and the more so when he presented us with letters from England. Business, too, had speeded well ; he had brought the four negro men and as many girls, which I had sent for, and they cost rather less than the sum I had given him.

Religious services and teaching filled up the Sunday, as heretofore, and on Monday and Tuesday the schooner's cargo was discharged. As the rains might again be expected in eight or ten days, all hands were set to work in getting in the produce of our various plantations. The corn and tobacco, and many of the roots, were secured by the 21st, when the rain began to fall, and lasted, as usual, about five days ; and after it ceased, the remainder of the crop was taken up, and the grounds replanted with all expedition ; so that, by the 31st of May, all was finished.

During these operations my dear wife and myself had frequent conversations on the expediency of making a visit to England ; and, having determined to do so, we made it known to our brother and sister. They could not but admit that we felt and judged rightly ; and a few days after we assembled the people, and told them of the necessity of our absence for a few months. I then gave my brother the commission I had drawn up, appointing him my lieutenant, and it was read aloud to them ; after which I expressed to them my hope that they would be governed by him as they had been by me, not doubting but he would do everything for their welfare ; and, having appointed the following morning for a full settlement of accounts with each individual, they were permitted to retire.

I visited the different parts of the settlement to see that everything was right before I left, and gave directions to Allwood for some additions I wished made to the mansion house during my absence. After drill on Saturday, the 5th of June, accompanied by my brother and Captain Drake, and Allwood and Hart, not omitting my faithful and intelligent

Diego, we walked down towards the rocks that form the sea-line of the open ground before the mansion, and here I pointed out a position, within forty yards of the shore, where I proposed to erect a ten-gun battery *en barbette*. I planned out the work as I would have it done, and then took occasion to communicate to these chief men of the colony, what I expected from them while I was away.

Sunday, 6th. We kept this day with the usual solemnity; and on the next morning, our trunks, a box of fine shells, and the iron chest, containing 1930 doubloons, 3800 dollars, and the gold and silver articles found in the cave, being all ready on board the *Porgy*, we set forward to embark, accompanied by our brother and sister, and followed closely by Diego and Rota, and all our people: our older friends were deeply affected, embracing our knees and kissing our hands; and thus, with their blessings and the blessing of God, we sailed out of the northern channel with a fine breeze from the east, bound for Jamaica.

CHAPTER XVI.

We had a long passage, owing to light winds, so that we did not arrive at Kingston until the 21st of the month, where, finding the lodgings of our obliging brown landlady unoccupied, we took up our residence there. On the following day I engaged our passage in the *Phoenix*, Captain Tracy, for London, she being quite ready for sea.

Being now at leisure, I sat down with Drake to give him instructions in regard to the various matters that would require his attention during my absence; and having gone through with them, "Now,

Drake," said I, "there is but one point more: having determined to establish a military force as far as our strength will allow, and my brother being my lieutenant, I will thank you to purchase cloth, and lace, and such other things as may be necessary to make him a complete suit, corresponding as nearly as possible with the soldiers' uniform; and, that all may be right, get him a proper sword and hat; also, before you sail, provide yourself with a midshipman's dress." Drake was fond of military display, and therefore readily promised that my wishes in this particular should be immediately attended to.

Circumstances occurred to detain the vessel a few days longer than was expected, but on Friday I sent on board the iron chest, with our trunks and other baggage, and early on Saturday morning, after settling with our brown hostess, and taking an affectionate leave of all our friends, myself, my dear wife, and our faithful Fidele embarked on board the good ship Phoenix. The seabreeze setting in, the noble ship was soon under sail, and we passed out of the harbour in gallant style. The weather continued fine until we got into the Gulf of Florida, where we were much annoyed by fogs and variable winds. We got on very well, however, and, meeting with no accident on the passage, on the morning of the 17th of August we arrived off Gravesend. Our fellow-passengers instantly set off for London by land, but I contented myself with sending a note to Messrs. Perry and Co., informing them of my arrival, and that I had brought with me some doubloons and dollars, and also some gold and silver manufactured articles of value, of which I sent an inventory, and requested them to despatch a clerk to meet me, and take charge of the chest containing them, on the arrival of the ship the following day.

We proceeded up the river the same afternoon, and before the ship came to her moorings, Mr. Child, one of the partners of the banking house,

came on board, and introduced himself to me. After the usual compliments, he asked me if the gold and silver articles I had enumerated were in the ship's manifest; and when I replied in the negative, he said he was afraid they would be seized; or, if we should even succeed in getting them entered at the custom-house, that great difficulties would be thrown in the way of paying the duty and recovering them. "What am I to do, then?" said I; "I have no desire to cheat the revenue." "If the custom-house officers get hold of them," he replied, "they will be but little scrupulous in defrauding you of them altogether, if they can set up any plea for doing it." "Can they touch the bullion?" said I. "If they find it in the same chest, they may," he answered; "and I am not sure that they would not seize the ship also." I now became very uneasy, and proposed to throw the articles overboard rather than risk any of the possibilities he had suggested. My wife was present at this conversation. "My dear husband," said she, "send for the captain immediately, and state the matter to him exactly as it is." Mr. Child opposed this step, as being rash and dangerous. "It is the only one that can, with propriety, be resorted to in the present exigency," I rejoined, "and I shall take it."

Captain Tracey and myself had been on the best terms during the passage; he was an honest, open-hearted man, and I therefore hesitated the less in confiding the matter to his discretion. "Put the gold and silver muslin, or whatever you call it, in your trunks," said he, "and I will clap the rest down in the manifest as the property of Edward Seaward, Esq., passenger: they will undoubtedly admit everything to entry but the gold and silver cloth." The banker was not quite sure of this; but I took the captain's advice, and disposed of the tissues as he directed, packing the other articles in a large box, and putting a card on the lid, endorsed,

"Gold and silver articles, belonging to Mr. Edward Seaward, passenger, Phoenix; to be entered at the custom-house, London." After we had thus arranged matters, "Well, madam," said Mr. Child to my wife, "I think this may do: Mr. Seaward is truly happy in having so good a counsellor." In the evening we went on shore, taking the trunk in which was the tissue; and which the officer on board allowed to pass on receiving a fee of 5s. Mr. Child very politely accompanied us to the hotel in the Adelphi, and, on taking his leave, promised to send a clerk to take the iron chest to his bank. We congratulated ourselves on being once more alone, with our faithful Fidele; and he seemed to be no less pleased.

About noon the next day we received our trunks, with a note from Captain Tracey, stating that he had found much difficulty in getting the gold and silver articles admitted to entry; but, being satisfied that the demur was chiefly to get a *douceur*, he had borrowed five guineas from my banker's clerk on my account, which soon effected the object; and that, as soon as the duty was ascertained, he would inform me of it. I was well satisfied with this account of the matter; but it did not end here; for in the sequel I had more trouble about the things than they were all worth. A plea was brought forward under some old statute respecting popish relics, and I know not what; in consequence of which I had to swear that the crucifixes did not belong to Jesuits, and that they were not for the use of the pope or his emissaries, &c.: nor is it improbable, had not the laws against necromancy and witchcraft been fortunately repealed a few months before, that I should have had another string of oaths tendered to me, on the subject of obeas and talismans, as touching the triangular pieces of gold, and some other strange-looking articles in the box; for the more oaths the more fees. However, in about a month

from my landing I obtained the things, after paying in fees and duty upward of £200.

We remained within the whole of Wednesday, except walking out a little in the dusk of the evening for exercise. In repacking our trunks on Thursday morning, we were reminded that our wardrobe would not do. The mode differed considerably even from what we had seen among well-dressed persons in Jamaica; and, notwithstanding our vanity-despising humility, we could not resist the desire of appearing like other gentry of easy fortune. While we were conning over this matter, Mr. and Mrs. Child were announced; and, after the exchange of compliments, my dear wife, with her usual ingenuousness, told her visiter how much she should be obliged for a little counsel on a subject we had just been discussing; adding, "When we make ourselves look like other people, I shall be happy to return your kind call." "My dear Mrs. Seaward," replied she, "I shall be too happy in assisting you to ruin your husband in any way!" Eliza looked planet-struck: at length, recovering from her astonishment, she asked what she was to understand by such a declaration. "Oh, nothing," replied Mrs. Child, laughing; "*c'est seulement une façon de parler*: you shall go with me instantly in my carriage, and we will order whatever you wish." My dear wife thanked her with great courtesy, but said, if she would have the kindness to send a milliner and mantuamaker to her, it was all the trouble she could think of putting her to, and for this she should be much obliged. Her visiter pressed her to accompany her, but in vain. The giddy Mrs. Child little knew the steady purpose of the one she would persuade to enter on a project, where a mere phantom at the outset, if, indeed, it were no more than a phantom, had so shocked her sensitive mind. As this was a visit of ceremony, I said nothing to Mr. Child on business; and, after a rather longer stay than

ceremony seemed to require, the lady, finding her importunities unavailing, at length rose, and they took their leave. "Many thanks to Mrs. Child," said my dear Eliza, as we heard their coach drive away. "Jest and earnest, not unfrequently, are like the shadow and the substance. I have seen the shadow—it shall be my care to avoid the substance; I must be on my guard, I perceive, with that woman." I smiled, but endeavoured to convince her that nothing was meant; that it was only an idle flourish of the lady, and should be passed by as such; but, smiling in turn, she reminded me of my own maxim in other matters as to the excellent quality of caution, and begged leave to be permitted to exercise it in regard to her new acquaintance.

Before dinner-time the milliner and mantuamaker arrived, and also a tailor that I had sent for. After a long consultation and much discussion with these important personages, all points were at length settled, and on Saturday evening our undress suits came home. On Sunday morning we prepared for church, a happiness looked forward to by us with pleasure ever since our arrival; and, in truth, we much needed some spiritual help, through the ordinary means of grace, for we felt that the tone of our devotional feelings had undergone no very favourable change since leaving our tropical paradise. My dear wife, being dressed in the new mode, found great difficulty in walking with high heels, not having worn any for more than two years, and those low compared with the present style. Her farthingale, too, was cumbrous, and altogether she felt very uncomfortable; a little black hat with feathers being the only tolerable part of her attire. I had less to complain of, Eliza's good taste having decided for me against lace. My suit, therefore, was a plain one, for which I was thankful: deep ruffles had been appended to my shirts at the breast and wrists; my knee and shoe buckles were handsome; and, as I

would not submit to the torture of a *toupee*, my head was accommodated with a morning peruke in tie, and a plain hat, with a silver loop and button, completed my attire. We attended divine service at the church of St. Martin-le-Grand; and on our return to the hotel, after having dined, we endeavoured to keep alive our habit of reading the Scriptures.

On Monday we returned the visit of Mr. and Mrs. Child, and left our names, they not being at home. I then proceeded to Lombard-street, where I met Mr. Perry, who took me into an inner room, leaving Mrs. Seaward the while in the carriage at the door. He lost no time in compliments, but proceeded immediately to business: saying, first, that he had to congratulate both himself and me on his judgment in investing my money in the three per cent. South Sea transferable stock, for that the fours would now certainly soon be paid off, to the great loss of the holders: that the threes had advanced since he made the purchase for me in May last year, from 83 to 99, which last price was the quotation at Change Alley this day; and, although the fours had also risen considerably, namely, from 105 to 114, yet, whenever the ministry found themselves able to do it (and they might do it any day, if they knew how to go about it), they would pay off every hundred with a corresponding hundred in money; that is, with a £100 three per cent. stock, and the additional bonus of £1 or £2. "But," continued he, "there are wheels within wheels, Mr. Seaward; and that which ought to grease the large wheel is employed to grease the small ones. I am a Whig, sir, and a supporter of the king's government; but there is a want of principle in the men at the head of affairs that would disgrace Change Alley. The truth is, men in office too frequently sacrifice principle to a momentary expediency, which to me is no small evidence of inferior talents." Having said this with some degree of warmth, he apologized for allowing

himself to deviate from the subject of our business ; but the truth, I suspect, was, that he had taken some pains to advise the minister on the mode of paying off the four per cent. stock, and his good-offices having been treated rather slightly, he was piqued, and could not suppress his indignation.

However this might be, I thought the present a favourable opportunity to mention my wish to purchase a grant of the islands, and, accordingly, I broached the subject to him. "There will be some difficulty in it, I apprehend," he replied ; "yet it is not three years ago since grants of lands in the island of St. Christopher's were given to the amount of £40,000, to portion off the Princess Royal on her marriage with the Prince of Orange." "But how shall I set about it?" I inquired. He paused a little, and then said, "There are so many ways, that I hardly know how to direct you : if there were but the king's highway, I should be at no loss to point out the road. Excuse me, Mr. Seaward," he continued, after another short pause, "but would you be content to wade through dirty water to accomplish this affair, or is it your intention to go to it simply as a man of business, and in that way put it to issue?" "As a man of business," I replied ; "I will not approach the minister through any dirty channels. The truth is, Mr. Perry, I desire to effect my object with no other view, and for no other purpose, than to secure the poor people there in their little possessions, made somewhat valuable to them by their own labour and my patronage ; but for any personal advantage, I would freely bind myself to give all the money I may ever derive from it to the minister's lackey, or to any one else he might choose to appoint." "Give me your hand, sir," said old Perry ; "I will negotiate for you ; but in these times, a suspicion of indirect interest in the thing is sure to be entertained ; and, until Sir Robert Walpole can be made to see it as it is, he will believe it to be

something of more importance than you are disposed to admit, and so withhold the grant until he is satisfied in some way or other on the subject." I had no argument to offer against this, and therefore finished by accepting his kind offices; adding, that I should cheerfully rest the result on his endeavours, and my own integrity of purpose.

This consultation being brought to a close, he urged me to invest my doubloons and dollars in the three per cents.; but I told him it was probable I should have occasion for the whole of the money, and that I would therefore allow it to remain as it was. "Do not do that," said he, "but send it to market: it will never bring a better price; and I will place the amount to your credit, and allow you two per cent. for it, as I have hitherto done for all moneys above one hundred pounds, and it will then be equally at your command as now." I did not hesitate, and fixed the next day to count out the doubloons and dollars for the purpose of converting them into current money: I then shook the old gentleman cordially by the hand and took my leave, a favourable impression being made, if I mistook not, on both sides.

Eliza was not tired with waiting for me, but she was, nevertheless, glad to see me again. "My Edward," said she, as I stepped into the coach, "I thought I had lost you." I would have told her at once all that had passed between Mr. Perry and myself but for the noise of carts and carriages, and of people bawling along the streets all sorts of things to sell, chairs to mend, and bellows to mend, as if the crier himself had a pair of smith's bellows within him. But, while dinner was getting ready, I related to her the whole of the banker's conversation: she was much pleased with it, and said it was straightforward and to the purpose; "that Mr. Perry showed his colours"—an expression she had been much accustomed to at our island-home; and she ventured

to predict, from what had passed, that through his agency the business would be done, if it could be done at all.

During the remainder of the week I was engaged in business, partly at the custom-house in regard to the gold and silver articles. But my first object was to ascertain the precise state of my finances. I had called at the banker's agreeably to promise, and counted out 1900 doubloons and 3000 dollars from the iron chest, reserving 30 of the gold pieces and 300 dollars for my own use, lest I might at some future day require them. The doubloons were sold for £6650, and the dollars for £675, and passed to my credit. I now received my account current, in which I perceived £67,424 in three per cent. South Sea stock, purchased at 83 in May last year, and £2105 in the same stock, bought in January last at 95, the cost of the whole in money being £58,000. In the statement of other items, *pro* and *con*, there appeared a balance of £9554 11s. 6d. to my credit this day, viz., the 28th of August, 1736; so that, without taking the value of the contents of the box at the custom-house into consideration, or my brother's debt to me, I could estimate my fortune at nearly £68,000 sterling, and my income from government securities at upward of £2000 a year, each half-yearly dividend being £1074 2s. Having thus ascertained the state and condition of my money concerns, I felt myself prepared to square my expenditures accordingly.

On Sunday we attended church morning and evening, and early in the week had the pleasure to receive letters from dear Mr. Goldsmith and my sisters, in acknowledgment of some we had written immediately after our arrival. They hoped to see us soon, and we as sincerely hoped and desired to escape from the vortex we saw gathering round us, to the peaceful retreat of our virtuous, gentle, and dearly-loved friends.

Sir Robert Walpole was now out of town, but early in September the murder of Captain Porteus by the Edinburgh people brought the minister to London, to hold a cabinet council, and very soon after this Mr. Perry contrived to solicit an interview for me, and procured a card with my name written on it, bearing Sir Robert's initials in one corner. My dear wife and myself rejoiced when he called on me with the news of his success thus far. "Now, Mr. Seaward," said he, "I hate bribery and corruption in all shapes, and I have reason to believe you are of the same mind; but when you take this card, you must give a crown to the porter at the gate, another to the warder in the great hall, and half a guinea to the servant in waiting, who will show you into the secretary's room; and when you present him (I mean the secretary) the card, put a couple of guineas into his hand, wrapped up in a clean piece of paper, saying, 'Sir, I will thank you to give this to those to whom I have given so much trouble.'" I soon got my lesson, and thanked Mr. Perry for the trouble he had taken in the business.

The next morning I went to the minister's residence at the hour appointed for my attendance, and passed the porter and the warder with silver keys, the servant in waiting with a small gold key, and delivering my card to the secretary, and putting two gold pieces, neatly wrapped up, into his hand, saying the precise words dictated by Mr. Perry, he made a gentle inclination of his head, and dropped the offering into one of his waistcoat pockets, a pouch ample enough to contain a peck, Winchester measure. He took my card and went away, and, returning in a few minutes, desired me to wait. I was shown into a room where there were five gentlemen already expecting a summons. The anxious brow or inquiring eye was to be seen in every one, but nothing passed beyond some remarks on the oppressiveness of the weather. In about an hour I

was requested to follow the servant in waiting, but had scarcely got beyond the anteroom when a person with a star made his appearance, desiring to see Sir Robert. I was therefore under the painful necessity of remaining with the other expectants half an hour longer, during which time three more gentlemen came in, no doubt all by the help of silver and gold keys, and little packets for the secretary's capacious and very fashionable pocket. I was at length again summoned, and being ushered into the minister's library, found him sitting before a large round table, in an old carved oak chair, with a pen in his hand, surrounded by written and printed papers, and the moment I entered he began to write. "You must not speak, sir, till he is at leisure and speaks to you," whispered the attendant gently in my ear. In a few minutes the great man laid down his pen, and, without farther preface or ceremony, he addressed me, and the following dialogue ensued verbatim, for which I am not indebted to my memory, as will afterward appear.

Sir Robert Walpole.—"I understand, sir, you want a grant of some island, or rocky islands, on the Spanish Main: I wish to know upon what grounds you make this request?"

Mr. Seaward.—"I was shipwrecked, sir, nearly three years ago, on those rocky islands, when on my passage from Jamaica to the Bay of Honduras. We had been driven out of our course by a hurricane: the vessel struck in the night: the captain and crew took to the boat, and no doubt were lost. Next morning the brig drifted in over the reef, and I and my wife were the only persons saved. We landed on the largest island, and remained there alone, making the best arrangement I could for our future comfort. In about six months afterward, two negro men and three women, who had escaped from a wrecked Spanish schooner, were also cast upon the island. We then all laboured industriously to

cultivate yams and maize, and some other seeds and roots I had taken on board the vessel for my use at the Bay of Honduras. Some months after this, having seen vessels pass, we took the brig's fore-topgallantmast and ensign, and erected a flagstaff on the highest point of the land: very soon after it was done I heard guns in the offing, and, on ascending the height, saw a Spanish armed brig pursuing an English schooner, and firing at her with her bow-chasers. I immediately hoisted the colours, and the schooner made for the inlet. We had three or four muskets and some boarding-pikes I had brought from the vessel, which we carried with us for our own defence, should it be necessary. But, sir, I could not stand by and see the Spaniard firing at an English vessel, directly under our flag, without making a return upon his decks, on which he hauled his wind and stood off. The schooner, which belonged to Norfolk in Virginia, came then safely to an anchor, and the Spaniard hove to in the offing. In the night, however, he sent in his boat to take the schooner; but we met his boat with all the force we could collect, namely, six or eight of us altogether, armed with the muskets and boarding-pikes, and some axes and billhooks, and we succeeded in not only repelling him, but in taking from him ten muskets, with his ammunition, and two Bermudian negroes, his prisoners, that he had put in the boat as being good rowers. The officer gave up his sword, and I sent him and his crew back, thus disarmed, to his commander, with a message, saying, that the conduct of the captain of the guarda-costa was unpardonable, and it should be represented. I am afraid, sir," continued Mr. Seaward, "I am tiring you with a long story, and, if you please, here it shall end." Sir Robert replied, "Go on, sir." Mr. Seaward resumed: "After repairing some damages the schooner had sustained, I took passage in her to Jamaica, and there purchased a Bermudian vessel,

in which I carried to the rocky island a new mainmast, a suit of sails, a captain and a crew for the brig in which I had been stranded, and also some artificers and negroes, with stock and implements, to settle a little colony where Providence had placed me. I applied to the governor of Jamaica for a commission as captain-commandant of the islands, that I might be legally authorized to repel any attack of the Spaniards against us, and to give protection to any vessel taking shelter from them among our rocks; and, having obtained this credential, I took a twelve-pound gun to the island, which is now mounted on the height near the flag-staff; and I have trained the people to arms for defence, and have taken possession of the group of rocks and islands in the name of our most gracious lord the king. I am therefore desirous to have a *grant* of all those rocks and islands under the seal of his majesty."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"This is a very serious business, sir: I have heard your version of it, but the court of Spain may have occasion to represent it very differently. When the necessary inquiries have been made, my secretary shall have directions to require your attendance."

Mr. Seaward.—"Sir Robert Walpole, I should despise myself, and one I love dearer than my life would despise me, and the God I desire to serve would abhor me, if I could lie to you or to any man, or in one tittle deviate from the truth. If I had not loved and honoured my king, I need not have taken possession of those unpeopled rocks in his name. The Spaniard would have gladly acknowledged them and me. And in what way can I more substantially show my allegiance than by offering to pay for a *grant* of that which is, in point of right, my own? Neither England, nor Spain, nor any other country had ever thought it worth their while to take possession of those rocks; and, as I am not a courtier, I

hope you will pardon my free declaration, that if I am to be pushed by and put off with the answer you have now given me, I will immediately go to Madrid, and try how the matter will be received there. Recollect, Sir Robert, if the king is to have a right in those islands, it must be through my right. Yet I wish to come to you for a grace; but when I have grace to ask as a favour that which is a right, I do not see much grace in refusing a right as if it were a favour."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"You are very warm, young man. If you were to go to Madrid, they would send you to the Castle for firing on their guarda-costa, and in all probability you would be executed as an uncommissioned pirate. Call on me to-morrow morning at ten o'clock, and I will see what can be done."

I called on the minister the next morning according to appointment, but, instead of seeing him, I got no farther than his secretary. This gentleman was abundantly courteous, telling me I could not see Sir Robert, but that he would do everything in his power to serve me and promote my views. He even overwhelmed me with compliments; said I ought to be made governor of Seaward Islands with a handsome salary, but that the hands of the minister were absolutely tied: Pultney, and Wyndham, and some others kept up such a continued alarm that nothing could be done. However, he could assure me that the minister was well disposed towards me; and if I could call in a few days, he would let me know when I might call again. But he insinuated that Sir Robert was rather displeased with my freedom of speech, and that he (the secretary) feared, unless we could make a friend of some person who had the ear of the minister, there would be no end to my difficulties. "Then, sir," said I, "you have no instructions to arrange this business with me?" "Oh, bless you, sir," he replied, "business is not done in the kind of way you seem to expect. At present I

do no more than promise you my good offices; and I do so, relying on your good sense to make a careful and proper use of them." "I don't understand your way of doing business, sir," I rejoined, and have therefore only to beg you will accept my best acknowledgments in the same spirit you have offered me your best services." He stared at me, and, each bowing very low to the other, I retired.

On returning home, I related to my dear wife all that had passed. She commended me for my upright spirit, saying, "If you can secure the islands by direct and honest means, even at the cost of a considerable sum, do it; but disdain, as you have done, any admission of bad conduct, or any overture of bribery to secretaries or go-betweens." "Spoken like yourself," said I, "my Eliza."

On the following day I had a visit from Mr. Powis, a gentleman to whom I had been introduced by Mr. Child, and who had made many professions of friendship. After the usual compliments, he said, "Well, you have had an interview with Sir Robert, and it terminated just as I should have anticipated." "And how do you know how it terminated, Mr. Powis?" I replied. "On your honour, Mr. Seaward, you will never disclose any communication I may make to you, and I will tell you more than you could suppose. You won on my friendship the first day I had the pleasure of meeting you at Mr. Child's, and I am anxious to serve you. The minister has two ears, which, perhaps, you may think a very foolish observation. You did not speak to him through the right ear, although I understand you were very impressive; so much so, indeed, that he said 'I must know something more of this young man; I should not like him for an enemy.' But this sort of Puffendorff reasoning with a prime minister won't do, my friend. Therefore, if you desire to gain your point, be advised by me: lower your tone, and get the right ear of the minister—which, by-the-by, he

hope you will pardon my free declaration, that if I am to be pushed by and put off with the answer you have now given me, I will immediately go to Madrid, and try how the matter will be received there. Recollect, Sir Robert, if the king is to have a right in those islands, it must be through my right. Yet I wish to come to you for a grace; but when I have grace to ask as a favour that which is a right, I do not see much grace in refusing a right as if it were a favour."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"You are very warm, young man. If you were to go to Madrid, they would send you to the Castle for firing on their guarda-costa, and in all probability you would be executed as an uncommissioned pirate. Call on me to-morrow morning at ten o'clock, and I will see what can be done."

I called on the minister the next morning according to appointment, but, instead of seeing him, I got no farther than his secretary. This gentleman was abundantly courteous, telling me I could not see Sir Robert, but that he would do everything in his power to serve me and promote my views. He even overwhelmed me with compliments; said I ought to be made governor of Seaward Islands with a handsome salary, but that the hands of the minister were absolutely tied: Pultney, and Wyndham, and some others kept up such a continued alarm that nothing could be done. However, he could assure me that the minister was well disposed towards me; and if I could call in a few days, he would let me know when I might call again. But he insinuated that Sir Robert was rather displeased with my freedom of speech, and that he (the secretary) feared, unless we could make a friend of some person who had the ear of the minister, there would be no end to my difficulties. "Then, sir," said I, "you have no instructions to arrange this business with me?" "Oh, bless you, sir," he replied, "business is not done in the kind of way you seem to expect. At present I

can do no more than promise you my good offices; and I do so, relying on your good sense to make a grateful and proper use of them." "I don't understand your way of doing business, sir," I rejoined, "and have therefore only to beg you will accept my best acknowledgments in the same spirit you have offered me your best services." He stared at me, and, each bowing very low to the other, I retired.

On returning home, I related to my dear wife all that had passed. She commended me for my upright spirit, saying, "If you can secure the islands by direct and honest means, even at the cost of a considerable sum, do it; but disdain, as you have done, any admission of bad conduct, or any overture of bribery to secretaries or go-betweens." "Spoken like yourself," said I, "my Eliza."

On the following day I had a visit from Mr. Powis, a gentleman to whom I had been introduced by Mr. Child, and who had made many professions of friendship. After the usual compliments, he said, "Well, you have had an interview with Sir Robert, and it terminated just as I should have anticipated." "And how do you know how it terminated, Mr. Powis?" I replied. "On your honour, Mr. Seaward, you will never disclose any communication I may make to you, and I will tell you more than you could suppose. You won on my friendship the first day I had the pleasure of meeting you at Mr. Child's, and I am anxious to serve you. The minister has two ears, which, perhaps, you may think a very foolish observation. You did not speak to him through the right ear, although I understand you were very impressive; so much so, indeed, that he said 'I must know something more of this young man; I should not like him for an enemy.' But this sort of Puffendorff reasoning with a prime minister won't do, my friend. Therefore, if you desire to gain your point, be advised by me: lower your tone, and get the right ear of the minister—which, by-the-by, he

hope you will pardon my free declaration, that if I am to be pushed by and put off with the answer you have now given me, I will immediately go to Madrid, and try how the matter will be received there. Recollect, Sir Robert, if the king is to have a right in those islands, it must be through my right. Yet I wish to come to you for a grace; but when I have grace to ask as a favour that which is a right, I do not see much grace in refusing a right as if it were a favour."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"You are very warm, young man. If you were to go to Madrid, they would send you to the Castle for firing on their guarda-costa, and in all probability you would be executed as an uncommissioned pirate. Call on me to-morrow morning at ten o'clock, and I will see what can be done."

I called on the minister the next morning according to appointment, but, instead of seeing him, I got no farther than his secretary. This gentleman was abundantly courteous, telling me I could not see Sir Robert, but that he would do everything in his power to serve me and promote my views. He even overwhelmed me with compliments; said I ought to be made governor of Seaward Islands with a handsome salary, but that the hands of the minister were absolutely tied: Pultney, and Wyndham, and some others kept up such a continued alarm that nothing could be done. However, he could assure me that the minister was well disposed towards me; and if I could call in a few days, he would let me know when I might call again. But he insinuated that Sir Robert was rather displeased with my freedom of speech, and that he (the secretary) feared, unless we could make a friend of some person who had the ear of the minister, there would be no end to my difficulties. "Then, sir," said I, "you have no instructions to arrange this business with me?" "Oh, bless you, sir," he replied, "business is not done in the kind of way you seem to expect. At present I

can do no more than promise you my good offices; and I do so, relying on your good sense to make a grateful and proper use of them." "I don't understand your way of doing business, sir," I rejoined, "and have therefore only to beg you will accept my best acknowledgments in the same spirit you have offered me your best services." He stared at me, and, each bowing very low to the other, I retired.

On returning home, I related to my dear wife all that had passed. She commended me for my upright spirit, saying, "If you can secure the islands by direct and honest means, even at the cost of a considerable sum, do it; but disdain, as you have done, any admission of bad conduct, or any overture of bribery to secretaries or go-betweens." "Spoken like yourself," said I, "my Eliza."

On the following day I had a visit from Mr. Powis, a gentleman to whom I had been introduced by Mr. Child, and who had made many professions of friendship. After the usual compliments, he said, "Well, you have had an interview with Sir Robert, and it terminated just as I should have anticipated." "And how do you know how it terminated, Mr. Powis?" I replied. "On your honour, Mr. Seaward, you will never disclose any communication I may make to you, and I will tell you more than you could suppose. You won on my friendship the first day I had the pleasure of meeting you at Mr. Child's, and I am anxious to serve you. The minister has two ears, which, perhaps, you may think a very foolish observation. You did not speak to him through the right ear, although I understand you were very impressive; so much so, indeed, that he said 'I must know something more of this young man; I should not like him for an enemy.' But this sort of Puffendorff reasoning with a prime minister won't do, my friend. Therefore, if you desire to gain your point, be advised by me: lower your tone, and get the right ear of the minister—which, by-the-by, he

hope you will pardon my free declaration, that if I am to be pushed by and put off with the answer you have now given me, I will immediately go to Madrid, and try how the matter will be received there. Recollect, Sir Robert, if the king is to have a right in those islands, it must be through my right. Yet I wish to come to you for a grace; but when I have grace to ask as a favour that which is a right, I do not see much grace in refusing a right as if it were a favour."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"You are very warm, young man. If you were to go to Madrid, they would send you to the Castle for firing on their guarda-costa, and in all probability you would be executed as an uncommissioned pirate. Call on me to-morrow morning at ten o'clock, and I will see what can be done."

I called on the minister the next morning according to appointment, but, instead of seeing him, I got no farther than his secretary. This gentleman was abundantly courteous, telling me I could not see Sir Robert, but that he would do everything in his power to serve me and promote my views. He even overwhelmed me with compliments; said I ought to be made governor of Seaward Islands with a handsome salary, but that the hands of the minister were absolutely tied: Pultney, and Wyndham, and some others kept up such a continued alarm that nothing could be done. However, he could assure me that the minister was well disposed towards me; and if I could call in a few days, he would let me know when I might call again. But he insinuated that Sir Robert was rather displeased with my freedom of speech, and that he (the secretary) feared, unless we could make a friend of some person who had the ear of the minister, there would be no end to my difficulties. "Then, sir," said I, "you have no instructions to arrange this business with me?" "Oh, bless you, sir," he replied, "business is not done in the kind of way you seem to expect. At present I

can do no more than promise you my good offices; and I do so, relying on your good sense to make a grateful and proper use of them." "I don't understand your way of doing business, sir," I rejoined, "and have therefore only to beg you will accept my best acknowledgments in the same spirit you have offered me your best services." He stared at me, and, each bowing very low to the other, I retired.

On returning home, I related to my dear wife all that had passed. She commended me for my upright spirit, saying, "If you can secure the islands by direct and honest means, even at the cost of a considerable sum, do it; but disdain, as you have done, any admission of bad conduct, or any overture of bribery to secretaries or go-betweens." "Spoken like yourself," said I, "my Eliza."

On the following day I had a visit from Mr. Powis, a gentleman to whom I had been introduced by Mr. Child, and who had made many professions of friendship. After the usual compliments, he said, "Well, you have had an interview with Sir Robert, and it terminated just as I should have anticipated." "And how do you know how it terminated, Mr. Powis?" I replied. "On your honour, Mr. Seaward, you will never disclose any communication I may make to you, and I will tell you more than you could suppose. You won on my friendship the first day I had the pleasure of meeting you at Mr. Child's, and I am anxious to serve you. The minister has two ears, which, perhaps, you may think a very foolish observation. You did not speak to him through the right ear, although I understand you were very impressive; so much so, indeed, that he said 'I must know something more of this young man; I should not like him for an enemy.' But this sort of Puffendorf reasoning with a prime minister won't do, my friend. Therefore, if you desire to gain your point, be advised by me: lower your tone, and get the right ear of the minister—which, by-the-by, he

hope you will pardon my free declaration, that if I am to be pushed by and put off with the answer you have now given me, I will immediately go to Madrid, and try how the matter will be received there. Recollect, Sir Robert, if the king is to have a right in those islands, it must be through my right. Yet I wish to come to you for a grace; but when I have grace to ask as a favour that which is a right, I do not see much grace in refusing a right as if it were a favour."

Sir Robert Walpole.—"You are very warm, young man. If you were to go to Madrid, they would send you to the Castle for firing on their guarda-costa, and in all probability you would be executed as an uncommissioned pirate. Call on me to-morrow morning at ten o'clock, and I will see what can be done."

I called on the minister the next morning according to appointment, but, instead of seeing him, I got no farther than his secretary. This gentleman was abundantly courteous, telling me I could not see Sir Robert, but that he would do everything in his power to serve me and promote my views. He even overwhelmed me with compliments; said I ought to be made governor of Seaward Islands with a handsome salary, but that the hands of the minister were absolutely tied: Pultney, and Wyndham, and some others kept up such a continued alarm that nothing could be done. However, he could assure me that the minister was well disposed towards me; and if I could call in a few days, he would let me know when I might call again. But he insinuated that Sir Robert was rather displeased with my freedom of speech, and that he (the secretary) feared, unless we could make a friend of some person who had the ear of the minister, there would be no end to my difficulties. "Then, sir," said I, "you have no instructions to arrange this business with me?" "Oh, bless you, sir," he replied, "business is not done in the kind of way you seem to expect. At present I

can do no more than promise you my good offices ; and I do so, relying on your good sense to make a grateful and proper use of them." "I don't understand your way of doing business, sir," I rejoined, "and have therefore only to beg you will accept my best acknowledgments in the same spirit you have offered me your best services." He stared at me, and, each bowing very low to the other, I retired.

On returning home, I related to my dear wife all that had passed. She commended me for my upright spirit, saying, "If you can secure the islands by direct and honest means, even at the cost of a considerable sum, do it; but disdain, as you have done, any admission of bad conduct, or any overture of bribery to secretaries or go-betweens." "Spoken like yourself," said I, "my Eliza."

On the following day I had a visit from Mr. Powis, a gentleman to whom I had been introduced by Mr. Child, and who had made many professions of friendship. After the usual compliments, he said, "Well, you have had an interview with Sir Robert, and it terminated just as I should have anticipated." "And how do you know how it terminated, Mr. Powis?" I replied. "On your honour, Mr. Seaward, you will never disclose any communication I may make to you, and I will tell you more than you could suppose. You won on my friendship the first day I had the pleasure of meeting you at Mr. Child's, and I am anxious to serve you. The minister has two ears, which, perhaps, you may think a very foolish observation. You did not speak to him through the right ear, although I understand you were very impressive; so much so, indeed, that he said 'I must know something more of this young man; I should not like him for an enemy.' But this sort of Puffendorff reasoning with a prime minister won't do, my friend. Therefore, if you desire to gain your point, be advised by me: lower your tone, and get the right ear of the minister—which, by-the-by, he

does not wear on his own head, having there only the left and t'other ear." Mr. Powis seemed to lay so much stress on this matter of the *right ear*, that, coupling it with what the secretary had said about making a friend of some one "who had the ear of the minister," I really began to believe there was an auricular pivot somewhere, on which alone this business, and perhaps all other of a similar kind, could favourably turn. "But," resumed Mr. Powis, "you have not yet promised to preserve inviolably what I may impart to you." "I faithfully promise," I replied. "Do you remember," he continued, "what passed between Sir Robert Walpole and you at the interview?" "I certainly do remember the substance of it," I replied. "Is that anything like it?" he asked, putting a sheet of paper into my hands. After reading it attentively, "It is the very words," I said: "you astonish me, Mr. Powis; how is this? there was no person in the room." "You are right," he replied; "there was no one *in the room* but Sir Robert and yourself, but there is a listening door, or, rather, a person within hearing behind a door, who takes down verbatim the conversation held with every one admitted to an audience; and this is one of the minister's vouchers for the uprightness and integrity of his conduct, which he always keeps. And I do believe he is an honest man, and means right," continued Mr. Powis; "but he is so beset, and finds so much difficulty in managing Parliament, that he must preserve appearances, however ready he may be, under the rose, to grant through other channels anything for a hope of parliamentary services; and, indeed, he is so hard driven in this way, that he has been necessitated to establish a sort of fund, which is fed by such means as I have hinted at, for the purpose of securing votes from that quarter of the world 'from whence,' as the Psalmist says, 'promotion cometh;' and the treasurer of this fund is the person who has his *right ear*. Do you

understand me?" I thanked Mr. Powis with much sincerity for the disclosures he had made, and gave him credit for the purity of his motives, but stated frankly that I could not act upon his information: it would be a direct violation of my principles. He endeavoured to laugh me out of my scruples, but it would not do. "Why is all this, my good friend?" said I; "there is no absolute favour asked. A grant of some barren rocks in the Caribbean Sea is desired, and an equivalent is ready to be paid. Lands were the other day granted on the same principle in the island of St. Christopher." "You don't understand it," replied Mr. Powis; "there is always, in these cases, an abatement from the visible price which is to be accounted for to Parliament, in consideration of a secret sum, or some invisible influence, to keep the minister in power." The problem was now solved, and he had nearly talked me over into the necessity of compliance, when my dear Eliza came in. He now appealed to her, and repeated his arguments. She reflected a few moments, and then replied: "It is entirely wrong, Mr. Powis; the path is crooked; and, to my mind, that is quite sufficient to decide against it, whatever might be the result." "Pardon me, madam," he answered, "if I say it appears to me that you and Mr. Seaward are altogether too fastidious to accomplish any point of importance in life." "There is no point, Mr. Powis," she replied, "of sufficient importance to call for the sacrifice of singleness of purpose, without which all is perplexity ending in remorse; and if Sir Robert Walpole cannot manage Parliament in any other way than you have explained, he must be both a foolish and a wicked man." Mr. Powis was not prepared for this honest burst of eloquence, and here the subject dropped.

We waited anxiously for a week without being able to accomplish anything, and, giving it up as a hopeless undertaking, on Monday, the 4th of Octo-

ber, we began to pack up for quitting London, to visit our dear friends at Awbury. While we were thus engaged, a lady called and sent up her name—Lady Sundon. My dear wife was soon ready to receive her, which she did with the natural ease and dignity that ever distinguish a noble and ingenuous nature. After being seated, the lady said she had called by command of the queen, who, having heard that Mrs. Seaward possessed some very rich gold tissue, superior to anything ever seen in Europe, her majesty had honoured her, Lady Sundon, with a command to purchase it at any price, if it were indeed what it was reported to be. My dear wife smiled. “That cannot be, madam,” said she; “but I shall be most happy to present some pieces of gold tissue, or anything else I am possessed of, to her majesty.” “I fear,” replied the lady, “the queen cannot accept of it from Mrs. Seaward.” “Then,” rejoined my wife, “I shall have to regret, for once in my life, that I am *only* Mrs. Seaward.” After a short pause, the lady requested that she might be gratified with a sight of the article, and, in compliance with this wish, one of the most richly-wrought pieces was shown to her. She was struck at once by its incomparable beauty, and could not suppress her admiration, exclaiming, “This truly is fit for a queen.” I now left my dear Eliza and the lady together. It seems they soon became sociable, for I found them still there after an hour’s absence. My judicious wife had availed herself of the occasion to give to her visiter a brief account of our shipwreck and of our little settlement, and had also stated that our business in England was to purchase from the crown a grant of the islands, in order to secure our people in the possession of their grounds and habitations; but that, as we could not succeed in obtaining it, we were about going away, and would try to establish them as well as we could without it. In course of the conversation, she also mention-

ed how we had trained these poor people to the observance of divine worship, and instructed them on the Sabbath-day. Lady Sundon was a kind-hearted and somewhat pious woman, so that she took great interest in the narrative, and, on taking leave, promised she would endeavour to persuade her majesty to permit Mrs. Seaward to present the tissue in person for acceptance. My dear wife returned her ladyship a suitable compliment, and I had the honour of handing her to the carriage, which bore the royal arms.

After the lady's departure Eliza and myself turned the matter over, and hoped it might prove an interposition of Providence to accomplish that for us which we had failed in being able to accomplish ourselves.

On Tuesday my wife had a second visit from Lady Sundon, who imparted to her the pleasing intelligence that the queen would receive her on Thursday; and her ladyship, who now told us she was mistress of the robes and lady in waiting to her majesty, would call in a royal carriage for her. I soon retired and left them together, when Lady Sundon very kindly entered into all the minutiae with my wife, of the honour intended her. The dress she was to wear was settled, and the etiquette to be observed pointed out; but there was one point in particular on which her ladyship had directions to be informed. "What is Mr. Seaward?" she asked; "is he a merchant?" "He was a merchant," replied my wife, "but he is no longer one. He gave up his business entirely to his brother, and is now in the possession of an ample fortune." "I wish he had rank of some kind," answered Lady Sundon. "The only rank he has," returned my wife, "is that of captain-commandant of Seaward Islands; and I think I can show your ladyship his commission, signed by the governor of Jamaica." She soon laid her hands on the document, and showed it to her

ladyship. "That will do," said she; "I am glad to know this; it may be of importance to you in your introduction to her majesty, if nothing more."

The next day I was surprised early in the morning by a visit from Mr. Powis. "You will have a message this morning," said he, "to attend the minister; be therefore in readiness." "You are indeed very kind, Mr. Powis," I replied, "and you have acted towards me with a constant friendship, notwithstanding I rejected your counsel." "I esteem you the more, Mr. Seaward," said he, "for having done so, although it proves you have little experience of the world." He had scarcely finished the sentence, when a note arrived from Sir Robert's secretary, desiring my attendance at ten o'clock. I hastened to dress in the plain suit in which I had paid my former visit, and was punctual to the appointment.

Mr. Secretary was superabundantly courteous on the occasion, so that I was admitted at once into the library. The minister was not there, but came in presently by a door that led into some other room or passage—perhaps this was the listening-door spoken of by Mr. Powis. "I am glad to see you, Mr. Seaward," said he; "draw a chair near me, and we will talk over this business of yours." Then taking up a chart of the West Indies that lay on the table, "Show me," he continued, "where the rocks and islets are situated for which you want the grant." I looked on the chart attentively a little while, and then said, "They are not laid down here, Sir Robert, unless the Seranbas are intended to represent them." I then drew crosslines through the latitude of $14^{\circ} 30'$ N. and 81° W., saying, "This is as near the spot as I can tell you: the latitude is correct, but the longitude has not been ascertained by observation." He then desired to know their extent, which I described to him with as much accuracy as I could. "Now," said he, "tell me honestly what is your object in seeking to obtain this grant?" I

told him as before. He shook his head. "I am not surprised, sir," I said, "that you cannot believe me to be wholly disinterested; but I speak the truth, and will bind myself not to appropriate any rents or profits whatever from the grant, beyond freely bestowing its privileges on such persons as I may select, under the penalty of forfeiture of the money I may pay to the crown, and of the grant also." "Well," he replied, "I perceive you understand the strong side of an argument—the *argumentum ad res*; and I will take you at your word. Now," continued he, "who is to estimate the value of this place?" "Any one you please to name, sir," I answered, "if you will have the kindness to settle first a principle on which the valuation is to be made." "You are no contemptible diplomatist, sir," said he: "will you favour me yourself with some principle?" "I know of none, sir," I resumed, "that will exactly apply; but, for want of a better, I would take the average price of the uncultivated lands of St. Christopher's, sold three years ago on account of the crown." "That will do, I think," he replied: "but how shall we estimate the extent?" "I can supply that, sir," said I, "as I have a rude survey of the rocks and islands, which can be measured; and I should wish my map, such as it is, to be copied and appended to the patent." "Mr. Seaward," the minister now answered, "it shall be settled in your own way, and I am happy to meet your wishes. I have satisfied myself that you are no needy adventurer, and I am disposed to serve you. My secretary shall wait on you, with proper persons on the part of the crown, within a few days, and the business shall be done." I thanked him for his kind condescension, and ventured to express a hope that I might find an occasion, at some future period, to show the sincerity of my professions. Sir Robert bowed; and I took my leave. On my way home, I ruminated on the wonderful change I had wit-

nessed in the manner and conduct of the minister, but could not satisfy myself as to the cause; and my dear wife was equally puzzled when I told her of it.

On Thursday, at noon, the royal carriage called with the Lady Sundon. Eliza was dressed, and ready to receive her. The two pieces of embossed gold tissue had been wrapped in a piece of white satin, the original curious paper wrappers being previously folded round each piece: the parcel was placed in the carriage, and I had the honour to hand the ladies in.

After their departure I received a visit from Mr. Powis. He met the carriage just as it turned up into the Strand, and had recognised Mrs. Seaward. "Well, my good friend," said he, "I have come to congratulate you on your success with the minister; but do tell me how you think it has been brought about." "I cannot tell you, my kind friend," I replied; "you know, at least, as much about it as I do, and if you cannot explain it, I have no ground even for a surmise." "It is very strange," cried he; "no ear-tickling—no palm-tickling! but," continued he, "I saw Mrs. Seaward in one of the royal carriages; there may be something in that—I don't know." Thus he continued for some time to agitate the question, and tried many indirect inquiries to elicit from me where Mrs. Seaward was going, and who it was he had seen with her in the royal carriage. I told him I did not deem myself at liberty to speak of Mrs. Seaward's movements to my most intimate friends; that there was a delicacy connected with every action of a woman that forbade it: he felt the rebuke, and here the subject dropped.

At three o'clock my dear wife returned. I was impatient to know all about her interview, and eagerly asked her if it had passed off well. "Oh, quite well," she replied; "but it was all ceremony. On our arrival at the palace, we were received by a

gentleman in waiting, who escorted us to the ante-room. The parcel was brought up by some one, and placed on a marble table with gilt legs. In a few minutes a lady in waiting came to us, when Lady Sundon introduced me to her as the wife of Captain Seaward: this second lady now took my hand, and my friend (as I think I may call her) walking by my side, I was led into the room where her majesty was seated; and almost immediately after, letting my hand drop, she courtesied gracefully to the queen, saying, 'I have the honour to present the wife of Captain Seaward to your majesty.' 'You are welcome, Mrs. Seaward,' said the queen; 'I am happy in seeing you here.' 'I am too happy,' I replied, 'in finding myself in the presence of your majesty, and shall recollect this day with grateful satisfaction to the latest period of my life.' I had scarcely finished the sentence, when Lady Sundon put the parcel into my hand, and, as had been previously arranged, I approached quite near to her majesty, and dropping on one knee, laid the parcel at her feet, saying, 'If your majesty will be graciously pleased to accept this small tribute of affectionate loyalty from the hands of your most devoted servant, your condescension will leave the deepest impression of gratitude on her heart.' Her majesty merely replied, 'I have much pleasure in accepting anything from your hands, as a proof of my esteem for a good wife in trying circumstances.' Lady Sundon now took my hand and raised me up, and then courtesying together before the queen, her majesty made a sign that we might retire, which we did, keeping our faces towards her royal person until we got from the presence into the anteroom. Here my kind friend kissed me, and immediately said, 'Dear Mrs. Seaward, you have acquitted yourself nobly: the carriage is in waiting for you; hurry home to your husband, who will be made happy by the account you have to give him.' I took leave

of Lady Sundon, and at parting she promised to call on me in a day or two: a gentleman in waiting handed me to the carriage, and now here I am, as you see, dear Edward."

The week passed away without our seeing her ladyship, or hearing anything from Sir Robert's secretary relative to the grant. On the following Monday, however, one of the minister's secretaries made his appearance at my hotel, when all the preliminary matters were arranged; the quantity of land being settled, on an inspection of my chart, at 7880 acres, for which I was to pay 5s. an acre, or £1970.

Tuesday, the 12th. Eliza received a visit from Lady Sundon, who kindly invited her to pass the day with her. My dear wife looked at me: "Will you spare me, Edward?" said she "Certainly," I replied, "to a lady so sincerely attached to you." "Indeed I am," exclaimed her ladyship, taking my wife's hand in the kindest manner. Eliza then begged permission to go and dress, which she said she would very soon do, and left me with Lady Sundon. After some high encomiums on my wife, and telling me how much the queen had been pleased with her, her ladyship inquired how I got along with the crown officers in relation to the grant. I told her it had been definitively arranged the day before, and would soon be made out, and I hoped immediately presented to her majesty, as regent, to sign. "Now, Captain Seaward," said she, "I will tell you a secret: the queen has not been very well pleased with a certain person for the course he intended to pursue with respect to your affair; she spoke to him on the subject, and soon became peremptory; and it is only in consequence of this that the business has been done. You now know, therefore, to whom you are obliged; and take care," she continued, "not to throw away your money on persons who may seek to persuade you that the obligation is in some other quarter. The queen knows all that has

passed between the minister and yourself, and between you and other persons in relation to the matter, and has expressed her admiration of your spirit, and of the noble sentiments you avowed." My wife soon joined us, and, after thanking her ladyship for her great kindness, I handed them to the carriage and saw them off.

At about eight o'clock my dear wife returned, highly gratified by her visit to the palace. She had dined with Lady Sundon, and in the afternoon her majesty had desired to see her in a private manner. The queen received her affably, and listened with great interest to the particulars of our shipwreck and subsequent adventures, and our improvements on the island. When the subject of my attack on the Spanish guarda-costa came up, my dear wife must have put forth all her eloquence in behalf, as she was pleased to say, of her "brave and generous husband;" for her majesty exclaimed, "Nobly done! he shall have the reward of the brave." As the day began to draw to a close, her majesty said, "You must come another time, and tell me more; it is altogether a very interesting story;" then taking her by the hand, the queen added, "I am delighted with your present; it will make me the richest dress in Europe; and I desire you will accept this from me in return," taking a diamond cross from a little case, and fixing it with her own hands to the pearl necklace my wife wore on her neck. My dear Eliza was deeply affected by this signal graciousness of the queen.

The next morning Lady Sundon called again. After a few minutes' conversation with my wife, she told her that the queen would fix an early day to see her; but, said she, "my visit is chiefly to you, Mr. Seaward. I am come to save you some unnecessary uneasiness. The queen will throw aside the grant when it is brought to her, with other papers, to sign. Mr. Powis, most likely, will call and tell

you this; and as, of course, you would feel surprised and uneasy if you did not know how it had happened, I am authorized to say to you that in a few days after it will be signed by her majesty, with some special alterations she intends." I thanked her ladyship, and said, "I should be most happy to acquiesce in any alteration her majesty might think fit to make." Lady Sundon smiled. "I fear, my lady," I resumed, "you will scarcely be able to pardon the liberty I am about to take; but I throw myself on your kindness—may I ask who Mr. Powis is?" She smiled again, but not as she had smiled before: a sort of quivering now played about the mouth, curling up the angle of the lip. "I believe he is one of Sir Robert's jackals," she replied; "but, to do him justice, he is not a mercenary. It is a passion with him to find out everything and to tell everything, in doing which he has done incalculable mischief; but he still goes on, cherishing the vain hope of serving all parties. Vanity seems to be the mainspring of his actions: he is desirous to be thought somebody, and is never so well pleased as when he can do a little job for Mr. Paxton, the secretary to the treasury, and bring some grist to their private mill." "I thank you, my dear madam," I replied; "sometimes I have suspected it was so, but really could not make him out; his friendship for me appeared so perfectly disinterested." "He is not exactly a bad man," she resumed, "but he is true to the game he has engaged himself to play; I say engaged himself, for he is a volunteer in the business." "Well, how incredible!" exclaimed my dear wife; "I could not have suspected such double-dealing in any man." "Ah! dear Mrs. Seaward," replied our noble visiter, "any base coin, impressed with the image of Virtue, is allowed to circulate here for gold, and passes current without much scrutiny."

On Friday I had a visit from Mr. Powis, who

came in with a very long face, and after as long a preamble, he proceeded to tell me that I had been deceived in the quarter where I had grounded my expectations; that, after all the trouble Sir Robert had taken, the queen-regent had refused to sign the grant, and had thrown the paper aside. I made no reply. "Now, my dear friend," continued he, "if you would have been guided by me, this could not have happened." "Indeed, I believe so, Mr. Powis," I replied. "Well, then," he resumed, "be wiser in future, and I will put you in the way of rectifying your error." "I thank you, my good friend," said I; "but every man, I suppose, has a rule or principle of his own to guide him; and mine says, 'Keep the straight path in all your doings, and leave the result to the Disposer of all things.'" "Very well," he rejoined, "and that is the minister! but if you continue in your folly, you will by-and-by be unable to get to him by any path whatever." "Thank you, Mr. Powis," said I again, "for your good advice; but I was not born to shine in Protean wisdom, and shall therefore leave the matter where it is." I am sure I could read in his face, "What an ass that fellow is!" After a little more vain rhetoric, he took his leave.

On Tuesday, the 19th, a note came from Lady Sundon, saying there would be a levee at St. James's on Friday, and that her majesty desired Captain Seaward, accompanied by Mrs. Seaward, to attend in his uniform, and that Lord Harrington would present him.

We were not a little perplexed to know what was intended by this unexpected honour, but I employed the interval in preparing for the occasion, and at the appointed time we made our appearance at the palace. Lady Sundon took my wife from my hand at a turn of the grand staircase, and at the same time I was introduced to Lord Harrington, who led the way for me to the anteroom. He then

took me aside, and asked me if I knew the purpose of the queen in desiring my attendance at the levee. I replied, it was an honour I had no right to expect, but her majesty had been graciously pleased to command my attendance, and it would afford me great pleasure to express my gratitude. "There is something more than what appears," said his lordship, "if I am not mistaken; however, I think it right to tell you, if her majesty should hold out her hand when you are presented, drop down on your right knee, and gently approach her hand with your lips, but do not move from your kneeling position; and if she should desire you to do anything, do it, whatever it may be." Having said this, he took me by the arm, adding, "Now we must go in." There were many of the nobility present, and several officers, naval and military, all of whom formed a sort of half-circle; and I had the advantage of seeing some of them presented. It soon came to my turn, when his lordship took me by the hand, and, as we advanced from the circle, the queen looked steadily at me. "I have the honour," said Lord Harrington, "to present to your majesty Captain Edward Seaward, who, under a commission from the governor of Jamaica, commands a small dependancy on the Spanish Main." "You are not unknown to us, sir," said the queen; "and I am happy in an opportunity of evincing my satisfaction with what you have done for the service and honour of his majesty." She held out her hand, and I did as his lordship had directed me. In an instant I saw a sword in her majesty's hand: from whom she had taken it I had not seen; but she laid the blade upon my shoulder with the gentlest grace imaginable, and said, "Rise up, Sir Edward Seaward." There were two persons thunderstruck—Sir Robert Walpole and myself. I was too much absorbed in my own affair to notice him; but Lord Harrington told me afterward, that when her majesty finished her address to

me, Sir Robert looked round him with evident confusion, to the no small pleasure of some persons present. However, like a true courtier, he lost no time in coming up to me, and, giving me his hand, said, "Sir Edward Seaward, I congratulate you on the favour of her majesty." The levée being concluded, Lord Harrington had the kindness to say that his carriage was in waiting for us, and we returned in it to our hotel, quite overpowered with a sense of our gracious queen's goodness and condescension.

The next day Lord Harrington sent his compliments, and Sir Robert Walpole sent his compliments, and our dear friend Lady Sundon called to pay us her respects.

On Sunday we attended divine service at St. Martin's, and dedicated our afternoon to reading the Scriptures. "Ye cannot serve God and mammon:" we began to feel the truth of this saying of our divine Master. "Let us not, dear Edward," said Eliza, "lose the favour of God for all this world can bestow." We therefore prayed fervently to God in Christ for the forgiveness of our sins, and grace for future holiness of life.

On Monday the minister's secretary called with the grant, which had been signed by her majesty as regent of the kingdom, and she had ordered the clause to be expunged which entailed forfeiture on me in case of my turning said grant in any way to my own profit by the sale of land or otherwise. I read it over, and expressed myself well satisfied. "I will pay you the money down, sir," said I; "and there is no occasion for a receipt, for I perceive the consideration money, £2000, is expressed in the deed." "It is so, Sir Edward," he replied. I then drew an order on my bankers for the amount, and handed it to him. He sat a while without saying anything, but I perceived there was yet something to be done. "Are there any fees, sir, to pay?" I

asked. "I am directed, Sir Edward, to demand the fees." "But, sir," I resumed, "you have had some trouble in this business, and I beg you will do me the favour to accept this rouleau," putting a paper roll, containing fifty guineas, into his hand; "and I desire my best thanks to Sir Robert Walpole, and that you will accept the same for yourself." He bowed courteously, and made some complimentary speech, which, with our present knowledge of such things, vanished into thin air. When he was gone, my dear wife and myself congratulated each other on having at last obtained the object of our voyage, and we returned thanks to God, who, by his control over the minds and actions of his creatures, had accomplished this great matter for us.

A gentleman called on me the next day respecting the fees of knighthood: I made a thousand apologies, and really felt ashamed, the matter never having crossed my mind. He politely replied it was quite time enough, and, at my request, made a list of the items, which amounted to £92. I begged his acceptance of £100, requesting him to make the disbursements for me, and apply the surplus as he might think proper. He received the money very courteously, and paid me many compliments by way of change, which I as courteously accepted, and he took his leave.

About this time we received letters from Awbury, and our business being all settled, we determined to delay no longer visiting our dear friends there. I therefore purchased a good travelling-carriage, and sent for our hostess, and requested her to recommend a waiting-woman to Lady Seaward. After some little pause, she said, "there was a nice young Frenchwoman (a relative of Madam Filibert, the tirewoman, who had waited on us soon after our arrival), a good scholar and a good miliner, and who sung and played on the guitar charmingly, that *wanted* a situation." My wife requested her to send

for Madam Filibert and her relative, and she would talk with them.

We felt ourselves under no inconsiderable obligations to Madam Filibert. She had, on the occasion alluded to, brought some fashionable articles of dress for my dear wife to look at, and Eliza had shown her some pieces of our gold tissue. She was so struck with its beauty that she spread its fame far and wide, and to this, we had learned, we were indebted for the first notice by her most gracious majesty.

Madam Filibert and her niece Rosalie came in the evening, and had an interview with my wife. "I hope, madam," said the aunt, "you will treat her more like a companion than a servant, *comme une petite amie*; for she is of a good family, although I who say so am her relative. Her father was a Protestant clergyman of the remnant of the Huguenots; but he and his brother, my husband, died poor, and she, and I, and my daughters have sought in your country that protection we could not find in our own." My dear wife was a good deal affected, and promised to be a kind friend to her niece. Rosalie appeared modest and intelligent, possessing a light and agile figure, and was, upon the whole, quite engaging. The terms on which she was to serve were soon arranged, and it was stipulated that she should accompany her mistress to the Indies if we required it. My dear wife was not forgetful of our indebtedness to the unconscious tirewoman, and placed a *douceur* of five guineas in her hand. This act of generosity surprised the good woman not a little, and, returning a thousand *remerciements*, she withdrew.

By the end of the week all our accounts were paid, our things packed, and every arrangement completed, and, on summing up my expenditures, I found I should get out of London for £3120, including the amount paid for the grant, and all other matters; but, as such an occasion was not likely

to occur again, though these disbursements were heavy, they gave me no uneasiness.

On Monday morning, the 8th of November, having sent off our heavy trunks to Bristol by the carrier, with two small trunks and a handbox placed in the fore-boot of the carriage, and Rosalie, and our faithful little dog, and the two embossed cases inside, we set off for Awbury.

The roads were excessively bad, and we spent some time at Oxford and Blenheim on our way, so that we did not reach the neighbourhood of Awbury before Thursday morning.

As we drew nearer to the cradle of our childhood-years, objects became more and more familiar, exciting at every step some pleasing reminiscence; and when, at length, we saw the church through the leafless trees, our hearts bounded with joy: the parsonage-house soon followed, with dear Mr. Goldsmith standing at the gate. "Sit on this side, love!" said I, hastily, "that you may be next to your father when the carriage-door is opened." She took the place just as the postillions pulled up: one instantly dismounting, opened the door and drew down the steps; and he had scarcely got out of the way, when my dear wife was in her father's arms; but not a word was spoken by either. My three sisters were standing in the back-ground, and Eliza's two remaining sisters were clinging to their father and his darling child: the old gentleman, supported by his children, gradually retired towards the house; and then my own sisters came up to the carriage while I was descending, and received me with the like tenderness. We quickly followed into the house, where I embraced my only earthly father with all the warmth of filial affection. Fidele had sprung out immediately after his mistress, and, now that higher emotions were softening down, the caresses of the faithful little dog were not unnoticed: every one had something to say to him, and he seemed to

know everybody and everything, jumping and dancing about as though he would leap out of his skin. "This is a happy day for us, dear Fidele!" said Eliza, still holding the hand of her father.

During the first week of our sojourn, nothing was talked of but our eventful history. Dear Mr. Goldsmith hung over our story with a never-tiring avidity, every now and then blessing God for his providential care of us, and for the grace he had vouchsafed to put into our hearts. We told our good father, privately, everything that had taken place in London, but beyond him we did not think it prudent to make any disclosures; and we moreover confided to him the secret of our wealth, and all that had passed in our minds respecting it.

On Sunday we had the indescribable happiness of worshipping God in the temple of our fathers, where every tender emotion was awakened, softening the heart, and exalting our devotional spirit. Many were the greetings we received in the churchyard and on the way: it was delightful to meet again our old schoolfellows and friends, and to be caressed by the aged who had been kind to us in our youth. Early in the week some of the most wealthy and genteel of the country gentry called to pay us their respects. These attentions we in due time returned, but refused all invitations to dinner, visiting and feasting not being our objects; yet we were not of an unso- ci-able turn, but aimed at higher pleasures.

At the expiration of a few days our heavy trunks and packages arrived from Bristol, and we now began to consider what was to be done during our stay at Awbury. My dear wife, as well as myself, had always been friendly to arrangement, and liked to lay out her time to advantage. We had talked over the possibility of learning French from Rosalie, who, we soon discovered, had been well educated, and books had been purchased for the purpose. Thus we allotted a certain portion of our time to

study, and the remainder to business, and to our dear friends or occasional visitors. I did not forget, meanwhile, to write to my brother James and Captain Drake, and to my kind uncle at Bristol, promising to see him shortly.

Having spent about a week at Awbury, we now determined to pay the promised visit to my uncle at Bristol, and, taking Rosalie with us, we set off in a style corresponding to our station in life, and reached his door a little before noon. He was at home to receive us, and did it quite in his old way. "Glad to see thee, Ned! Dang it, thee's so fine: never mind, so all's right within." I smiled, and shook him cordially by the hand. "How is my aunt, sir?" said I: the old lady was not far off. "The better to see thee, my dear nephew; and thee, my dear girl," she exclaimed, meeting us in the passage, and greeting us with kisses and a hearty welcome. The old lady now asked us ten thousand questions, almost all together; and, among others, whether I had brought her any curiosities. In conclusion, she thanked her niece for the silver tissue sent by Captain Taylor, and then begged to be excused, that she might see to the dinner, which was now ready.

The old gentleman began his jokes before the cloth was removed: "Why didst not bring thy French cook with thee, Ned? I suppose thee hast a French cook, as thy lady has a French waiting-maid. He would have knocked up some kickshaws for us." A smile was my only answer to my uncle's wit. Then he had at me about my money and the galleon, at which I laughed heartily; but Eliza, not much liking the jest, took the liberty of setting him right on that point. He, however, made several attempts to find out what I was worth, but I always baffled him.

The next day my uncle had a large party in honour of our arrival, to which the mayor, sheriff, and *other dignitaries* and gentry were invited, and every-

thing passed off greatly to his satisfaction. We spent about a week at Bristol in a very pleasant manner, and then returned to Awbury.

I had been for some time thinking of purchasing an estate in England with a part of my money, and hearing, shortly after my return, that a fine property belonging to Colonel Tomlinson would be sold by auction at Gloucester in the course of the following month, I mentioned the subject to Mr. Goldsmith. The result was, that I visited the estate soon after, examined it thoroughly, and was much pleased with it: it comprised 1750 acres.

On the day of sale (the 14th of January), therefore, accompanied by my dear Eliza and her father, I went to Gloucester. The company having collected, and the rent-roll, in which the leases, rates, tithes, &c., were mentioned, being read, the auctioneer proceeded to state that ten per cent. was to be paid down, as deposite money, by the purchaser, and that a good and satisfactory title was to be given before the payment of the remainder would be required. The property was then put up: I bid on it, and it was finally knocked down to me at £24,000. I at once paid down the deposite money by a draught on my bankers, and was much pleased with my purchase.

The next day we returned to Awbury to a late dinner, at which my sisters had been invited to meet me. They were delighted with the information of my having bought the Hartland estate (that being the name it bore), and I added not a little to their happiness by acquainting them with my arrangement respecting themselves. "As soon as I get possession," said I, "I intend you three shall take up your residence at Hartland house; and as all the furniture is to be left, excepting plate, glass, china, and linen, there will not be a great deal to do to render it tolerably comfortable. About the middle of April we propose to return to Seaward Islands; and it is

our wish, dear Maria," continued I, addressing myself to my youngest sister, "that you should accompany us, leaving Grace and Anne to take care of the house in our absence. On our return we will live all together, unless some of us should, in the mean time, be otherwise disposed of. Maria was delighted at the idea of going with us; and the others were equally so with their prospects at home.

On Friday, Mr. Wilson, my attorney, accompanied by the attorney of Colonel Tomlinson, called with the title-deeds, which I found to be duly executed, and in every respect satisfactory. The carriage and horses were sent for immediately, and, after taking a hasty dinner, I set off accompanied by Eliza and her father, and the two attorneys, for Hartland, where, on paying the balance of £21,600 by a bill on Perry & Co., I was formally put in possession, in the presence of three witnesses, and received the deeds: the business being thus finished, we returned to Awbury.

There were no inmates left in Hartland house except the gardener and his wife, whom I had promised should remain. Having been long unoccupied, some considerable preparation was required to render it habitable; but everything was at length arranged, and with my dear Eliza, Rosalie, and Fidele, I drove over to our new abode. We found the place very clean, and were much gratified with the improved aspect it had so soon assumed. A few days before it was all disorder and gloom, now everything was neat and cheerful. The fires were bright, and the servants attentive and smiling. The tea-things were on the table, and the candles ready to be lighted; and my sisters, who had been several days there, to see that things were properly done, were right glad to see us: in the course of the week we contrived to make ourselves quite comfortable.

The Monday after our removal, Eliza's sisters and

their worthy father came over to spend the day with us. I prevailed on him, during his visit, to take upon himself the stewardship of the property: we also agreed on an outline of the course to be pursued towards the tenantry; and, in making a new let, to take the price of wheat, now 4s. the bushel, for our guide. I notified the tenants to meet him and me at the house on Thursday, when everything was explained to their satisfaction.

The garden and grounds about the house were in a most ruinous state: I therefore hired a couple of men to assist the gardener, and had the pleasure to see great progress made in putting them in order, so that by the middle of the month we were quite settled, and everything going on like clockwork.

It was not long before we received visits from all the first people in the neighbourhood; and as it was reported that my wife corresponded with the queen, Lord and Lady Berkley did not think us unworthy of their attention. We duly returned the visits that were paid to us; but, from prudential motives, and our love of domestic quiet, we refused all invitations to dinner.

My dear wife and myself had now frequent conferences on the subject of our return to Seaward Islands; and as we determined to sail early in May, I wrote to my brother James and to Captain Drake, desiring that the schooner might be in waiting for me at Kingston by the second week in June.

The month of March passed away without anything important occurring, during which we kept very much at home, devoting ourselves to books and the study of the French language, my dear Eliza amusing herself sometimes in arranging her beautiful shells, while I visited the gardener and his men at their work; so that our time was spent pleasantly, and I had the satisfaction to see that the grounds and garden would be left in excellent order.

Things glided on thus till the middle of April,

when, deeming it time to prepare for our departure, I had many of our articles packed up and sent to Bristol, and engaged the cabin and staterooms of a vessel lying there (the Hero), bound to Jamaica, for the sum of £300.

My dear Mr. Goldsmith had been indefatigable in his inquiries for a clergyman to go out with us, and at last he met with a married gentleman having two children—girls, one three, and the other five years old. He had been recommended to go to a warm climate on account of delicate health, which for some time had prevented his performing his duties as a curate, but his finances were too low to enable him to profit by the advice: he therefore eagerly caught at the proposal, and even insisted on not accepting any stipend whatever until we should see how his health would turn out after his arrival. My father-in-law introduced the Rev. Mr. Rowley and his family to us on Sunday, the 17th, and I liked his appearance and manner very much. My dear wife was also much pleased with Mrs. Rowley and her engaging children, and we requested them to take up their abode with us until we all should be ready to embark.

As our departure was now drawing nigh, I thought it quite time to arrange matters with my kind and worthy father-in-law in respect to the management of my affairs during my absence, and he came over to Hartland for the purpose. "Now, my dear friend," said I, "you will promise to comply with all I desire you to do?" He said "I will." "Then," I resumed, "you are to receive the rents of the estate half-yearly, and out of them pay my sisters £100, and yourself £100." "For what?" he said, interrupting me. "For your services," I replied; "or, if you demur at the principle, accept it as a free-will offering, since by so doing you will make Eliza and myself happy, and we can well afford it." After hesitating a moment, he said, "£200 a year, in

addition to what I have, is too much for me; half of it is enough." "Then, if you please, give your daughters the other half," I replied, "my dear Mr. Goldsmith; but I must insist on your taking it, as you promised to comply with all I should desire." "Thank you, my dear son," he answered; "I will not refuse it, as I perceive you are in earnest." "There are still one or two things more," I added. "Let twelve cottages be built, at a cost of £20 each; to which attach three acres of good land, in suitable though distant parts of the estate; and as they are finished, give them to poor industrious families, rent free the first year, but afterwards at a rent of from £1 to £4, according as you find they can afford to pay. And now, dear instructor of my youth and father of my Eliza," continued I, "I request you to distribute in her name £50 annually, in such sums and at such times as you may think proper, for relieving the distresses of the poor in and about Awbury and Hartland." "I will do it," he replied; "and God will bless you, and the poor will bless the name of my child, and the hand of her father commissioned to succour them."

On Sunday the 24th, as usual, we went to church at Awbury, where we had the pleasure to see the majestic elm, so endeared to us from our infancy, in full foliage; and it reminded us of our magnificent and no less dear silk-cotton tree, under whose hospitable shade so many happy events had taken place. After service, my dear Eliza distributed five guineas among the poor of the village.

On Tuesday, my sister Maria, with the whole of the clergyman's family, set off in our carriage in advance of us, and the next morning dear Mr. Goldsmith and his daughters came over to Hartland to take leave of us. After a most affectionate farewell, Eliza and myself, accompanied by Rosalie and our faithful dog, took our places in the carriage

(which had previously returned from Bristol), and with heavy hearts left our beloved friends and our comfortable home, to follow the line of duty which we believed our heavenly Father had marked out for us.

On our arrival at the inn, my uncle was there to receive us : he told me the ship was ready, and all things on board, and that she would drop down to King's Roads the next day.

I had written to Lord Harrington, informing him of my intended departure, and on Saturday I received a kind answer from him, enclosing a private letter of introduction to Mr. Trelawney, who had just been appointed governor of Jamaica. Everything was now ready, and the ship was at anchor in King's Roads. The wind did not prove favourable, however, till Monday, and then all was hurry and bustle. My uncle and aunt came to the inn to take leave of us, and after a cordial embrace from both, and some tears from the old lady, we hastened away, and within an hour arrived at Lamplighter's Hall, an inn pleasantly situated near the mouth of the Avon ; and there embarking in a fine boat that was waiting for us, we soon got safely on board. It was nearly high water, the wind fresh and fair, and in half an hour we were under weigh, standing down the Channel.

CHAPTER XVI.

MONDAY, 2d of May, 1737. The weather continued fine and the wind fair, but the parson and his wife soon became seasick : Rosalie was sick also, but the two little girls and my sister were quite well. *The Hero* was a fine ship, with a noble cabin, so

that our accommodations were all that could be desired.

We stopped at Madeira to land some merchandise, and in eight or nine days after leaving that island got into the tradewinds. The weather was now delightful; the wind fresh and pleasant; the sea smooth; and the ship, with all her canvass spread, going along at an even and rapid rate. In the evenings we sat on the deck, listening to Rosalie singing to her guitar. The sunsets were particularly beautiful, the majestic orb going down in unclouded majesty, and decorating the horizon with all the brilliancy of burnished gold.

On Sunday, the 5th of June, we made the island of Antigua, and passed near enough to see its fine hills and valleys, and rich plantations; and on Monday, the 13th, we were off the east end of Jamaica, and beheld again with delight those stupendous mountains which had so excited our admiration on our former voyage. In the evening we were becalmed off the upper White Horses, but early the following morning the seabreeze reached us, carried us round Port Royal Point, and brought us to our anchorage ground in Kingston Roads at two o'clock in the afternoon.

My dear friend Drake was the first person on board, and right glad was I to see him. I shook him cordially by the hand; my Eliza did the same; and I then introduced him to the Rev. Mr. Rowley and his wife, and to my sister. Martin and Purdy, and the two New-England blacks were in the boat, and without any ceremony they sprang on the deck, and welcomed us with demonstrations of the most extravagant joy. We spoke kindly to them, and inquired after their welfare and the health of their wives.

We took up our quarters with our former hostess, the brown lady, her lodgings being fortunately vacant, and I immediately wrote a letter to the govern-

or, enclosing in it the one from Lord Harrington, and intrusted them to Drake. He returned from Spanish Town with an answer in the evening, inviting me to call at the government house as soon as I could make it convenient. I accordingly set off in a carriage early the next morning to visit his excellency, and he received me in the kindest manner. I related to him the particulars of my shipwreck and settlement on Seaward's Islands, in which he was much interested, and after conversing on a variety of subjects, he spoke of the Maroons, and the difficulty he had in bringing them into subjection; hinting, at the same time, that I might serve him essentially if I could procure about 200 Indians from the Mosquito shore to assist in hunting them down. I replied that I was a perfect stranger to the Mosquito Indians, but, if he would give me written instructions, I would send Captain Drake in my schooner to carry them into effect, and I was sure he would do it, if practicable. "Drake is a fine fellow," said I; "he served his time in the navy for a lieutenancy, but has not obtained promotion: he has been in my service nearly two years, and never made a difficulty in any business on which I have had occasion to employ him." "I'll tell you what, Sir Edward," replied Mr. Trelawney, "you stand well with the ministry, and they will not refuse you a small favour. It has come into my mind that we can prevail on the commander-in-chief here to place your yacht on the list of the navy, and give an order to Mr. Drake to act as lieutenant in command of her. If we can accomplish this, your interest at home can very easily get the act confirmed. It will serve him, and save you a vast deal of expense; for the vessel will be refitted at the dockyard here, stores will be allowed, and Mr. Drake will have lieutenant's pay." I thanked him most sincerely for the suggestion, and he immediately wrote a letter to the commodore on the subject. The result was, that in a few days my

friend got his commission, the Porgy was attached to the naval service, and a midshipman, with twelve men, and an armament of four guns, assigned to her. After some farther conversation I retired, much pleased with my interview.

We had passed several days very pleasantly, receiving numerous attentions from the governor and others, when the commodore informed me that he intended to send the Shark sloop of war in company with us, and, as it would be necessary for her to return as soon as possible, he hoped we should find it convenient to sail in a short time. We accordingly hastened our preparations, and everything being ready early on Monday, the 27th, we all embarked, and in a few hours, accompanied by our consort, we were clear of the harbour and fairly at sea. We had a prosperous run, and on Wednesday, at about three o'clock, made the north end of St. George's Island, the reef here trending to the southward: we therefore slightly altered our course, and a little before four o'clock opened the channel. We now crowded sail and hoisted our colours, the Shark following our example. As we approached, the colours on the promontory went up, accompanied by a gun. Our friends on board were now in high spirits, seeing these demonstrations of our home being so near; but the hearts of Eliza and myself were too full for speech; stretching themselves, as it were, to the shore, where so many affectionate but humble human beings (our fellow-creatures) were waiting anxiously to bless our return.

I had put on my uniform ready for landing, and, as the Porgy let go her anchor, Diego made his appearance in the six-oared boat, and rowed up alongside: we all soon got in, not forgetting Fidele, our once only companion on these then lonesome shores. This thought crossed my mind at the time; and, as if to give more force to it, Diego landed us on the very spot where he and his friends first step-

ped on shore from their canoe. Our brother and sister were on the beach to receive us, and close behind them our people stood in groups. The greeting was hearty, but tumultuous: some of them kissing our hands, others embracing our knees, and Rota, Mira, and Anne hanging upon their mistress, shedding tears of joy, so that, in the general eagerness to welcome us, we had scarcely a chance of exchanging caresses with our relations. As we walked up towards the mansion, Corporal Craig was at his station, and touched his hat as we passed, and two sentinels he had placed before the door presented arms.

I was much pleased with the manner in which the mansion had been enlarged and finished. A piazza had been affixed all round, and the whole was handsomely painted. Rota had laid out the table for coffee on hearing of our approach, and we were delighted to see everything in its place, ready for our reception.

Thursday, 30th. My dear wife and myself now resumed our habit of early rising; we were up before the sun, and found Diego already in waiting, and Rota and Anne in the hall. Our first care after breakfast was to visit the people at their houses, and we spent the remainder of the week chiefly in inspecting the different plantations, during which we were highly gratified with the evidence of comfort and thrift that was everywhere apparent.

Sunday, the 3d of July, was our first Sabbath among our people, after an absence of more than a year. "My dear Edward," said Eliza, "we must not suffer the observance of this holy day to be a matter of less importance to us now than when alone we walked with God in this peaceful paradise, in the full enjoyment of each other and of his divine presence. But, my beloved husband," she continued, "I would not deceive you nor my own heart, nor dissemble with my heavenly Father, and therefore must ac-

knowledge that for a long time I have been sensible of the briers and thorns which have sprung up in our path—the cares and the riches of this world, which have interposed themselves even between our most tender affections, and in a great degree separated me from a sense of the abiding presence of God!" As she said this she wept: I was silent, but my heart went along with her in every word, and I almost wished that I were again building up the plank house by her side, with none to behold us but our faithful little dog, and the Eye that delighteth in innocence and humility.

There was not sufficient room in the mansion for all the people (now quite a hundred), and boards were therefore placed on bricks, to serve as benches, under the silk-cotton-tree; where, at the ringing of the bell, we all assembled. The clergyman took his station between two spurs of the tree, where a chair was placed for him. The prayers were read with due solemnity, and there was every appearance of a devout feeling in the congregation.

Mr. Rowley concluded with a most instructive and impressive sermon, taking his text from the first chapter of St. John: "*In the beginning was the Word,*" &c. He held up to our contemplation the Divine Being creating all that our eyes behold, and lastly man; and then he proceeded to show that the same creative Power, "*the Word and Wisdom of God,*" descended from heaven at the appointed time, and became incarnate in the person of *Jesus*; by which union of *perfect God* and *perfect man*, he was made *the Christ, full of grace and truth*; dispensing sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, speech to the dumb, motion to the paralytic; cleansing the leper, and even raising the dead. The preacher also explained how these miracles were typical of the Saviour's power over the destructive maladies of the human heart, which bring forth sin and spiritual death; and that, having left his blessed Word to guide us in the path

of life, he died on the cross, making an atonement for our sins, declaring, "*It is finished.*"

The service being ended, my commission as governor and commandant of the islands was read to the people. I then addressed them on their duties to God, to all persons put in authority over them, and to each other; and assured them it would be my endeavour, as it was my duty, to set them a good example in all Christian and moral requirements: that I would make their welfare my chief care, and arrange a plan with their pastor for the education of their children, and of such adults as might choose to avail themselves of it. They expressed their gratitude in the most affecting manner, and then retired to their respective homes.

[We must now hasten to take leave of Sir Edward and his Eliza. We have seen them happily re-established in their island home, where, it appears, they remained till February, 1744, when they again embarked for England. The settlement in the mean time continued to prosper, increasing in population and wealth, and a variety of incidents more or less important occurred. But the relation of these would, we fear, prove much less interesting to the reader than the simple and touching details of which he is already possessed. The affairs of the colony, from this period, become more or less mingled with the politics and turmoil of the times, and its history no longer presents the same beautiful picture of secluded innocence and happiness which has hitherto constituted its principal charm. It may be well, however, briefly to state a few particulars in relation to some of the individuals who have been most conspicuous in the narrative. Drake was married to Maria a few months after her arrival in the island. He distinguished himself by his gallantry and enterprise in the war which subsequently broke out with Spain, and amassed a *considerable* fortune by the capture of Spanish vessels.

James Seaward continued to carry on his commercial operations, and also became rich. The Rev. Mr. Rowley laboured faithfully in his sacred office, and by the liberality of Sir Edward was enabled to make a comfortable provision for his old age. As for honest Diego, he accompanied his master and mistress to England.—A portion of the original manuscript—that is, from p. 630 to p. 704—is wanting. On the 704th page we find the date of 1749; and it also makes mention of the happy domestic residence of Sir Edward and his estimable lady at their seat in Gloucestershire, from the year of his return until he was called to London on public business five years after—that is, in 1749—when the narrative recommences, and in the few remaining pages thus acquaints us with the fate of Seaward Islands:]

“It will answer no good purpose, sir,” he replied, “but quite the contrary. Mr. Pelham has been sufficiently explicit, and I have nothing more to say on the subject.” “It is not my wish, my lord duke,” I observed, “to create any unnecessary vexation to his majesty’s government, but I have a duty to perform in another quarter. I cannot suffer my people to be abandoned like dogs, without seeking that redress to which they are entitled; and I shall feel compelled to have this business brought before Parliament if they are to be thus sacrificed.” “I tell you, Sir Edward Seaward,” he replied, “that the thing is done, and Mr. Pelham has already told you so. Those islands, or rocks, or whatever they are, must be delivered up immediately to the crown of Spain.”

On hearing this, I determined to make an effort to impress his grace with the political importance of the place. “The court of Spain, my lord duke,” said I, “knows the value of these islands, though perhaps you may not. During the war, the commanders both at Carthage and Porto Bello were ordered to take possession of them, and they at-

tempted to do so ; but we defeated their first expedition, capturing some of their ships, destroying others, and roughly handling those that escaped. Another fleet was sent against us, sufficiently formidable to attack the best of our West India Islands, but it suffered shipwreck on our shores, and with its remains we built vessels, and pursued a lucrative commerce. Whether, therefore, we contemplate Seaward Islands in a naval or commercial point of view, they are of no small importance, and the Spaniard knows it. The place is close to the track of his homeward-bound galleons : it is an *entrepôt*, too, by which his sullen commercial policy is neutralized, flags of all nations, including his own, resorting thither. And my people have made it what it is : it is respectably fortified, and, still, has never cost the English government one shilling. Can you tell me, my lord duke, where there is another spot under the crown that can put in the same claim ? Leave us, then, to ourselves. Say but the word that you will not interfere, and I will raise a thousand men at my own expense, and put the Spaniard at defiance."

All the compliment I can pay the duke is, that he kept silence while I was speaking, and changed colour two or three times in the course of the appeal ; but I got nothing more than this cool reply : " Sir Edward Seaward, I tell you again the thing is done, and the place must forthwith be delivered up to the Spanish crown. There will be £10,000 forthcoming for your indemnification, as I have already informed you, and that is £8000 more than we dare charge on the business. Why will you be so troublesome ? the Island of Rattan has been already surrendered, and every other place, agreeably to the convention, excepting these abominable rocks of yours." " This, then, being your determination, my lord duke," I answered, " with your permission I

will take my leave." He rose and bowed, when I took my hat, and, bowing in turn, withdrew.

After leaving the duke, my mind was so absent that I noticed nothing in passing until I arrived at my lodgings in Bruton-street. My dear wife was anxiously waiting my return, and in a moment she read in my countenance how matters were going. "My dear Edward," said she, "I see you are deeply affected: were it in your Eliza's power to make you happy in all things, you should not thus suffer." "Oh, dearest," I replied, "it is more than I can bear, to see our people treated like dogs, and turned over to the Spaniard without the slightest security or stipulation." "Yes, my honoured husband," she answered, "it is indeed grievous, and I am not surprised to see you thus oppressed with grief and indignation. But," continued she, "let us look at matters a little in detail, and derive from the view such consolation as we may: what cannot be helped must be made the best of. As to the loss the crown will sustain in giving up the place, that is their business, not ours; and as to any pecuniary loss you yourself may suffer, I am sure you care nothing about it. And then, as to the people: your brother is in England with his family; Drake is rich, and would be happy, I should think, to retire from a situation so full of anxiety; Mr. Rowley has remitted home a considerable sum; all the new merchants are personal strangers to us; and as to the other people, those whom you found slaves you have made free, and every one who came there under your auspices is rich in money, even though the government persist in taking from them their place of habitation. All these people, my dear Edward," continued she, "are in a condition to shift for themselves; and not one of them, I sincerely believe, will grieve half as much at the change that is awaiting them, as you are now doing for their sakes. The time was when I should have grieved with you

—when the settlement was to us as a nursing child ; but it is no longer so : every one there is now well to do, and, if scattered abroad, they are as capable of taking care of themselves as we are. They have not the same attachment to the place that you have, and they will soon find another home and be satisfied. Drake will return with his dear wife and family ; most likely Mr. Rowley will come to England also ; poor Rota is no more ; Diego is with us ; and Xavier and his family, wherever they go, will no doubt do well. Besides," she continued, assuming a more serious tone, " it is God's will, dear Edward, that our islands should again become a desert"—but as she said this, she could not suppress her tears—" and it is his will, I hope," she soon resumed, " that we shall be resigned to all his dealings."

My agitated feelings soon felt the soothing influence of these judicious counsels ; and while enjoying something like a return of peace within, I received an unexpected visit from the Earl of Harrington. He smiled as he shook my hand, but I perceived he was not quite at ease. In a few moments he said, " My dear Sir Edward, I have called on you, as your friend, to advise you to do the best you can with the minister, and yield the point. The fact is, the government is pledged to the crown of Spain to deliver up the islands, and it must be done. I have spoken to the king on the subject, but am sorry to say that he even showed displeasure at my interference. ' Tell Sir Edward Seaward,' said his majesty, ' the place must be given up immediately ; and he may consider it a mark of favour shown to himself, that I prevent his deputy-governor, Drake, from being brought to a court-martial, for resisting the authorities that have been sent to take possession of it in behalf of the King of Spain.' " " Indeed I am sorry," I answered, " that the king has been brought to see the matter in this light ; but I *will be guided* wholly by you, my lord. I have point-

ed out the situation and value of the place to his majesty's ministers, and yet they persist in their decision: however, I am not surprised that men who did not know that Cape Breton was an island, should be so ignorant as to place Seaward Islands off the harbour of Porto Bello. But the thing, it seems, is determined on, and I must submit: you will therefore greatly oblige me, my noble friend, by seeing the minister, and telling him that I will no longer offer any opposition to the order of the government, but that I expect he will appoint a commissioner fairly to carry the business into effect, and direct him to confer with me on its details. My only wish now is, that the people should be removed with that degree of consideration which is their due, for the sacrifice they are called upon to make to the honour of those who signed the treaty that expels them. I expect that a settlement will be provided for such as may choose to go to the Mosquito-shore, on the terms proposed to me by Mr. Pelham. Likewise say, if you please, that I will accept the £10,000 offered me, which I will place at the disposal of my friend Drake, to supply the necessities of the people; and if, after that, any part of it should remain, I will receive it as a small compensation for the money I have laid out in making those islands what they are." "I think this will be acceded to, Sir Edward," replied Lord Harrington, and after a little farther conversation he took his leave.

The next day, Mr. Pitts, who had been governor of Rattan, waited on me from the minister with full powers to arrange everything for the evacuation of Seaward Islands. The forts were to be demolished, and the place then given up. Such, he said, had been the fate of Rattan after the government had expended £15,000 upon it. Mr. Pitts was a liberal and kind-hearted man, and entered warmly into my feelings. He had been much among the Indians on Mosquito-shore, and cheerfully undertook to procure

a good settlement there for the Seaward Island colonists. Three successive days were occupied in completing our arrangements; and it was finally stipulated that the people should have three months to remove with their stock and goods, and that government should pay the expense of their transportation: that six square miles of land should be purchased on the Mosquito-shore for such as might choose to settle there; and that a commission should be given to Lieutenant James Craig, constituting him superintendent of the new colony. All this being settled, I sat down and wrote a long letter to my dear friend Drake, giving him the necessary instructions. I then handed the letter to Mr. Pitts, who, after listening to some farther requests I had to make, took his leave, and posted off for Plymouth, whence he proposed to sail immediately for the islands. Our business in London being thus brought to a close—

“Now, dear Edward,” said my beloved Eliza, “let us return to Hartland, and finish our days in peace.”

THE END.





STY
10/10/10

